

From a drawing by Frank Holland.

WELCOME, ENGLISHMEN.

The Story of The OLD BAY STATE

A Young People's History
of Massachusetts



By G. WALDO BROWNE

and

RILMA MARION BROWNE



1929

STANDARD BOOK COMPANY, INC.
Manchester, N. H.

Copyrighted

1929

By Standard Book Company, Inc.

PRINTED BY
THE CLARKE PRESS
Manchester, N. H.

To The Children
of
Massachusetts

PREFACE

In writing the Story of Massachusetts, it has been the earnest endeavors of the authors to tell it in an attractive manner so as to maintain the attention of the reader throughout. History, because it is history, does not necessitate merely a list of occurrences put down as so many statistics. Too often it consists of much hard fact and dry detail which is not easily comprehended and the reader finds himself reading just so many words but the story leaves no imprint on his memory. It is a "merciful" author who can smooth down the rough edges of bare facts and rigid accounts by relating it in a simple, comprehensive manner.

No history is infallible, it is ever open to criticism. Not having lived in those perilous days and being obliged, as we are, to accept information handed down to us from that generation, such facts and instances which have been remade in the telling are often unreliable. However, we have worked with diligent care and we hereby hope that the work will become a great help and subject of interest and that we have fully justified the state of Massachusetts in its proud and most wonderful history.

And now, as we gaze over a landscape dotted everywhere with the waymarks of progress, we should cherish in our hearts the story of those hardy pioneers who suffered and fought for freedom and who broke the root-bound sod of the primeval wilderness to plant on the

barren soil, for us, the seeds of Freedom and Prosperity. We, who sit amidst all the advantages of progression, should keep their memory sacred and every man, woman and child should know their adventurous story.

The men and women of that period were typical of their times and surroundings, with the hardy courage to make the stand against the dangers of their day; with the will and the power to crush the foe that lay in wait for them; with the wisdom and the spirit to stamp these sand dunes with the seal of the coming metropolis. This was the legacy they left us, as we must leave our legacy to those who follow to-morrow.

"Needs there be praise of the love written record,
The name and the epitaph graved on the stone?
The things we have lived for, let them be our story,
We, ourselves, but remembered for what we have done."

Prosper-
 progres-
 ery man,
 s story.
 ytical of
 ourage to
 ay; with
 y in wait
 mp these
 olis. This
 ur legacy

,
 done."

CONTENTS

	PAGE
I. The Pilgrim Fathers	17
II. The Governors of Plymouth Colony	39
III. The Puritans	54
IV. Governors under the Charter	69
V. Indian Wars	82
VI. King Philip's and Other Indian Wars	103
VII. The Royal Governors	122
VIII. Lexington and Bunker Hill	137
IX. "America Is Free"	163
X. The Story of the Sea	190
XI. The Conquest of Commerce and the Railroads	208
XII. The Romance of Industry	229
XIII. Massachusetts in the Civil War and Other Wars	248
XIV. The Story of Education	267
XV. Golden Massachusetts	301
Exercises	319

ILLUSTRATIONS

	PAGE
Massasoit's Welcome	Frontispiece
First Washing Day in America	19
Signing the Compact	26
Houses of the Pilgrims	29
House of William Bradford	30
Massasoit's Treaty	35
John Alden and Priscilla Mullins	44
Indian Boy Captive	46
Preaching to the Inhabitants	47
First Service under a Roof	49
New England Indians	50
Standish House after Leaving Plymouth	51
The Mayflower	53
Winthrop's Coming	57
Plymouth Vessel Passing Hartford	60
On Way to Church	63
First Town House in Boston	71
Method of Punishment	72
A Way of Punishment	74
John Winthrop	75
First House in Boston	77
The Culprit	80
Indian Night's Entertainment	83
The Indians	86
John Endicott	91
Nadawahunt	94
Scene of Wheeler's Surprise	104
Province House	120
Faneuil Hall	122
First Saw Mill	131
Samuel Adams	140
Hancock House	141
Destruction of the Tea	144
Concord Bridge	150
Washington Elm	164

Washington Tree	165
John Adams	174
Benjamin Franklin	186
Ship at Sea	192
Between the Constitution and Her Enemy	205
Early Industry	230
Shoe Making	236
Modern Ways	238
William Lloyd Garrison	253
Daniel Webster	254
Henry Wilson	258
Rufus Choate	260
Howland House	282
Well by the Side of the Road	286
Oliver Wendell Holmes	287
Ralph Waldo Emerson	289
Jared Spark	294
Oldest Street in New England	297
Merrimack River	309
Old Time Kitchen	315
Early Fashions	317

The Story of the Old Bay State

Story of the Old Bay State

CHAPTER I

THE PILGRIM FATHERS

The Mother of New England. Come to me, my children, and I will tell you the Story of the Old Bay State, the Mother of New England.

"But stop!" I hear some of you say, "you cannot mean that!"

I do. Study, as you will, the histories of the other New England states, Maine, New Hampshire, Vermont, Rhode Island and Connecticut, and you will find, as I have done, that they all begin in Massachusetts. So you see I am right when I say "the Mother of New England." And while you remember friend, father, brother or sister, the first to come into your heart and the last to be forgotten is the tender memory of Mother.

I promise you her story reads like a fairy tale. It has all of the plot and interest of fiction. I will not make the story over-long, and if it fails to hold your attention, it will be because I am not a good story-teller. Now, will you come with me, step by step, into the Wonderland of History?

A Small Ship Upon a Stormy Sea. My story begins on shipboard at sea. The man at the look-out has discovered land. He has been looking for it several weeks. So it has not come as a surprise. Rather, it has come as a blessed relief. No matter if the coast is barren; if the country is desolate; it is land. It promises them a haven of rest.

The dull sun of that gray November day was sinking into the west, as the storm-beaten vessel known by the poetical name of *The Mayflower*, weighed anchor in the choppy waters of the harbor of Provincetown. There was no town there then, only the record of John Smith and others, who had seen this place six years before and named the country "Cape Cod," on account of the many fish they had caught.

This was on Saturday, November 11 (old style), 1620, and the passengers of this ship have become famous since then under the term of "Pilgrims." They remained on the ship, for they were very religious and nothing was done until Monday, but to return thanks to God for their safe deliverance from a long, arduous journey.

First Wash Day. The water was shallow and the land looked far away. But Monday morning some of the women went ashore to do their washing. This was the first wash-day in America, of which we have any record. No doubt, after their long sea voyage, there was need of it. On Wednesday some of the men started on an exploring tour.

Early Visitors to Cape Cod. The Pilgrims knew others had been there before them. In 1602 Bartholomew Gosnold had sailed along the New England coast from Maine to Martha's Vineyard. Here Champlain had come in 1604, and Adrian Block, the Dutch navigator, who left his name upon an island not very far away, had come, while many fishermen from across the ocean had been here, made their hauls of fish, but had left little or no record of their wanderings.

More famous than any of these was the picturesque John Smith, whose life reads of romance and adventure. He had offered to come with the Pilgrims on this voyage, but for some reason they had not taken him.

Five Weeks Off Provincetown. For five weeks the *Mayflower* hung off the Provincetown shore. During



FIRST WASH-DAY IN AMERICA

this time Peregrine White, the first child, was born to this colony, while the life of Mrs. Isaac Allerton passed out.

All the time the men were exploring the coast and looking for some place where the prospect would warrant them in taking possession. Signs of Indians were seen, and corn was found buried in a mound of earth. They took some of this, saying among themselves that they would pay for it when they met the owners. In this respect, as in all others, they kept their word, as we shall see.

What a tale of peril and suffering lay behind this group of men, women and children, now searching anxiously for a favorable place to "pitch their tent!" I know of no stranger story.

In this day of free speech and bold thinking, we cannot imagine a people being driven from home, church and native land, on account of religious differences. Yet their story proved it.

They may have been stubborn themselves; no doubt they were. Still, they differed in social life, in political feelings, in religious belief with the party then in power in Great Britain. Turn, whichever way they would, and they were met by enemies. Seeing no light on the horizon of the future, a few of the bravest left their homes and fled to Delfthaven, Holland.

The English Fugitives. The people here were very kind to the English fugitives. They gave them certain religious freedom they had not been able to enjoy at home. And yet they were "strangers in a strange land," without finding the peace and satisfaction one so often looks for but seldom finds. Stories of the golden prospects in America reached them and made them uneasy. This unknown land was pictured to them as the "Land of the Golden West." So this project was talked over and over, until it was finally decided they should seek there

new homes, where they might worship and work according to their own desires and remain an English colony.

Not Alone in This Move. This was no more than the Quakers did some years later. It was no more than the Huguenots were compelled to do. They fled from religious persecution to Georgia and New England. It was no more than the Scotch-Irish did less than a hundred years later in fleeing from Londonderry, Ireland, to Londonderry, New Hampshire. It was no more than other peoples have done.

America in the Days of the Pilgrims. America was an almost unknown wilderness in the days of the Pilgrims. During the one hundred and thirty years which had intervened since Columbus had made his first voyage, the growth of the population had advanced very slowly. The English sea rovers had been more successful as explorers than as settlers. Raleigh's little colony in Virginia had vanished. Popham's men at the mouth of the Kennebec River had given up after they had managed to live through one cold winter. In the same year, 1607, the English undertook to make another settlement in Virginia. The conditions were very unfavorable.

So you see when the Pilgrims made their decision to come to America there were a few Spaniards in Florida. There was a handful of Englishmen in Virginia. The Dutch had a few trading posts on the sites of Albany and New York. Here and there a few scattered bands of trappers and adventurers wandered through the wilderness. Along the sea-shore an occasional fishing or fur-trading station had been established but none of the last-named became permanent.

In all of the present United States there were only a few scores of white people, and these were separated by hundreds of miles of unexplored wilderness. This wild country was haunted by wild beasts and wilder men, according to the graphic accounts given by those who

claimed they had seen them. If there were a chest of gold at the end of the rainbow spanning the ocean, who of the Pilgrims would prove strong enough to find it? It may have been well they could not see these things plainly.

Resources of the Pilgrims. When the Pilgrims had decided to make the venture, they began to look around for the money needed to meet the expenses. The expense account was quite likely to amount to considerable. Enough food must be supplied to last them on the voyage across the ocean. A ship must be chartered and paid for; port fees must be met and a hundred and one bills must be paid.

Certain men agreed to let them have the money and wait seven years for them to pay it out of the profit of their venture. This looked good, until they began to get the facts. In order to meet this debt the Pilgrims were to have two days to themselves in each week and work the other four days for the moneyed men. At the end of seven years, when the debt was supposed to be paid in full, the land and its improvements would be theirs. When the Pilgrims agreed to this, the capitalists demanded that they should work all of the time for them. This angered the Pilgrims—or at least aroused their determination not to meet the unreasonable request. “We are freemen; that would make us slaves. We will not consent,” they cried.

So they started to sell everything they could not take with them. Those of their friends, who for one reason or another had decided not to go, gave to them freely. A roll call was made, which showed that less than half of their number would take the venture. Their pastor, Reverend John Robinson, was to remain behind, and possibly come later. William Brewster was to go in his place.

The Speedwell, supposed to be a sea-worthy little craft,

was bought. Later the famous Mayflower and her crew under Captain Jones, was hired to make the voyage. The Mayflower was a vessel having a capacity of 180 tons. The captain was a bluff, piratical sort of man, while his crew were not the class of men our party would have selected to take them across the ocean.

The Start. So, with tears in their eyes for the friends they were leaving, many of whom they never expected to see again, the bravest of the Pilgrims went on board the Speedwell and headed for England. This was on August 1, or August 11 according to the present calendar, that they left Delfthaven. At Southampton, England, the Brigantine Mayflower was secured and loaded with passengers and provision. To meet their debts five hundred dollars' worth of their scanty supply of goods had to be sold.

The Loss of the Speedwell. Still holding to their brave resolution to do and dare, the little vessels stood stoutly out upon their perilous voyage. It was soon evident the Speedwell was unfit to cross the ocean. Her passengers were alarmed, so she was sent back into port. In this way about twenty of her men and women lost courage. These were sent on to London, while the others were crowded upon the Mayflower.

These delays had caused so much loss of time that it was on September 6, 1620, old style, that the brave little Mayflower stood out to sea upon the most memorable voyage ever undertaken across the Atlantic, except the expedition of Columbus.

The Pilgrim Passengers. I think we are apt to consider the Pilgrims as elderly men and women. The very words "Pilgrim Fathers" helps to lead to this idea. As a matter of fact, nearly half of them were children. The men numbered 44; the women were only 19, while 39 were under twenty-one years of age. You will need to remember that.

So far as we know only two of the passengers on the Mayflower were 54 years old. More than nine-tenths of them were under forty years. Miles Standish, the soldier, who was probably the only man in that band who dared to handle a gun, was only 36 years of age. William Bradford was only 31 years old, while John Alden, who had been taken on at Southampton, because he was a cooper, was a likely youth of 21. Scrooby had been the original starting point of the pilgrimage, but only Brewster and Bradford came from that neighborhood. The congregation at Leyden had shrunk to 33 members. The remaining 69 had been recruited from widely scattered homes throughout old England.

Cape Cod. The Pilgrim voyagers somehow had drifted north of the route they had planned. This harbor had been expected to be at the mouth of the Hudson River or southward of that point. But after sixty-three days of buffeting the winds of a charterless sea, their lookout had sighted land off Cape Cod.

Now a spirited discussion arose as to whether they should keep on and land on the Massachusetts shore or change their course and double the cape now lashed with wintry fury. The passengers who objected to a change of their course threatened, if landed in Massachusetts Bay, to disregard any laws that might be put in force, as they would be outside of the bounds of the law which governed their patent.*

The Mayflower Compact. This difference of opinion may have been the cause for drafting that unusual compact soon after lying at anchor off Provincetown, or there may have been another reason. Let that be as it may, Governor John Carver, the leading spirit of that

*It must be borne in mind that the boundaries were so carelessly fixed in those days, that a patent granted to England of Virginia indefinitely reached as far north and east as New England.—*Author.*

party, has the credit of drawing the remarkable document "the beginning of Democracy and of the government of law rather than men." Practically all of the men were induced to sign it. So, on November 11, 1620, the day and the month on which the Armistice of the World War was signed, in the dingy cabin of the Mayflower, the Pilgrims dedicated themselves to law and civil government.

THE TEXT OF THE MAYFLOWER COMPACT

"In ye name of God, Amen. We whose names are underwritten, the loyall subjects of our dread souveraigne Lord King James, by ye grace of God, of Great Britaine, France, & Ireland king, defender of ye faith, etc., haveing undertaken, and for ye glorie of God, and advancemente of ye Christian faith, and honour of our king and countrie, a voyage to plante ye first colonie in ye Northern parts of Virginia, doe by these presents solemnly and mutually in ye presence of God and one of another, covenant and combine our selves togeather into a civill body politick, for our better ordering and preservation & furtherance of ye ends afore said; and by vertue hereof to enact, constitute and frame such just and equall lawes, ordinances, acts, constitutions, and offices, from time to time, as shall be thought meete & convenient for ye generall good of ye Colonie, unto which we promise all due submission and obedience. In witness whereof we have hereunder subscribed our names at Cape-Cod ye 11, of November, in the year of ye raigne of our souveraigne lord, King James, of England, France and Ireland ye eighteenth, and of Scotland ye fiftie fourth. Ano: Dom. 1620."

To me there is no grander document in human history than this short, crisp, straightforward statement of that rugged little band of adventurers, Wanderers as they styled themselves, on the eve of taking the final step in the dark towards founding in the wilderness a state; aye, a Republic. Was not this a fore-runner of the Declaration of American Independence? It deserves mention with the other.



SIGNING THE COMPACT

That statesman, John Quincy Adams, had this to say of it:

"It was the result of circumstances and discussions which had occurred during their passage from Europe and is a full demonstration that the nature of civil government, abstracted from the political institutions of their native country, had been an object of their serious meditation. * * * In England the general principles of government were little understood and less examined."

Plymouth Rock. Having decided to make Boston Bay their objective point, they chose one of the crew, who claimed he knew these waters, for pilot. But somehow he missed his way. The Mayflower was allowed to drift along the coast. They missed Barnstable harbor. One day they stopped at a harbor they named Wellfleet. Then, on the 20th of December, they drifted into Plymouth harbor. How differently their history might have been written had they landed at Massachusetts Bay, where the Puritans came a few years later!

It was a bleak December day, which made the cheerless scene more dreary. Yet it was the best day they had seen for a month and they hailed this as a good omen. They decided to go ashore.

With what dread the little band of sea-tired veterans prepared to enter the boats may be imagined but cannot be understood by us. No person was to be seen on the shore. Not a familiar sight. Only the calm silence of desertion hung over the water, the rocks, the forest.

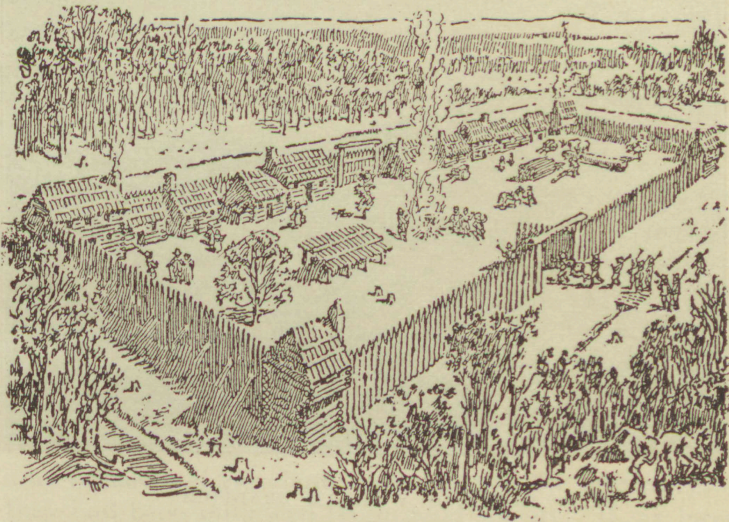
A big boulder of granite became the goal for their boats. We know this huge breastwork now as Plymouth Rock. I respect that crowd of eager men to allow a woman to be the first person to step from the foremost boat upon that solid footing. Priscilla Mullins is given the credit for the honor. It may have been Mary Chilton. Anyway, Plymouth Rock is the most famous rock in the New World. It is right it should remain so.

Preservation of Plymouth Rock. For sentiment's sake the stone, or at least the upper half, has been moved three times. A few years before the Revolution, fearing the rock would be covered by a wharf, some of the patriotic citizens decided to move the stone to a place where it could rest in peace. In trying to raise it the boulder was split in twain. Then the top part, considered the more sacred, was taken to the Town Square. Here it was an object of great interest to thousands of people for sixty years. Then, on July 4th, 1830, it was removed to a conspicuous place in front of Pilgrim Hall. Here it remained for more than half a century. Again public sentiment changed. This time the upper half was restored to its base and chained to the lower portion. Later it was covered by a granite canopy, where it remains, the purest and noblest relic we have in America.

Plymouth. The place towards which the Pilgrims had drifted, and which was to become their home, had been named Plymouth by John Smith, for a town by that name in England. I do not know why he did that, for he saw no people here. But the new-comers wisely took this name, though for a time it was called New Plymouth. If their choice was made through an accident, it was wisely made. The harbor was the best below Boston and this body of water was its protection on the east. On the south was a deep ravine through which wound a brook, while the west was as well protected by an abrupt hill rising to a height of 165 feet. The remaining side was an open field, which the Indians had cleared when they had lived in this vicinity a few years before.

According to Mourt's Relation of Plymouth we learn that "This harbor is a bay greater than Cape Cod, compassed with a goodly land. In the bay are two fine islands uninhabited, wherein is nothing but wood, oaks, pines, walnuts, beech, sassafras, vines and other trees which we know not.

"This bay is a most hopeful place. Innumerable store of fowl makes excellent food. It must be full of fish in their season, skate cod, turbot and herring the best we have ever tasted of. Abundance of mussels, the greatest and best we ever saw. Crabs and lobsters, in their time, infinite."



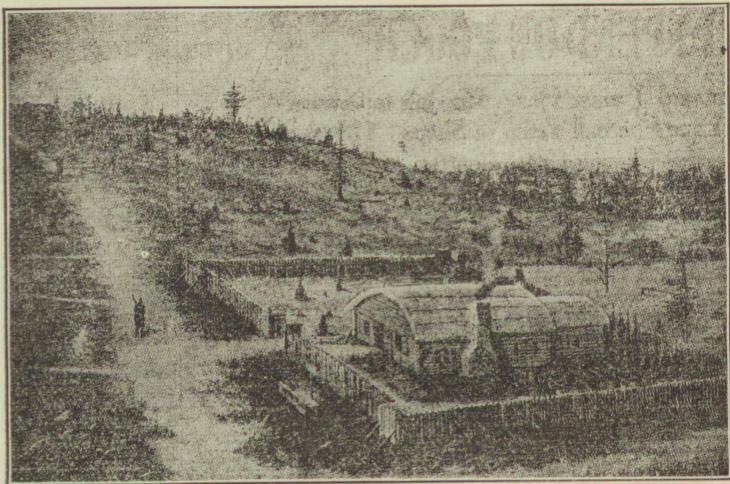
HOUSE OF THE PILGRIMS

The Pilgrims soon found other varieties of trees, such as wild cherries and plums. There were also berries, the best of which, the strawberry, came in handy in their days of famine.

The First Houses. With a cold winter ahead of them, the first thing for the newcomers was to build them shelters from storm and winter wind. So, while they all remained on ship-board nights, before Christmas six rude houses had been built. Into these, as fast as possible, families moved. Two others were soon built, so our picture shows eight dwellings. These have been taken

from an old print, made according to the most reliable information that could be obtained.

The one standing alone, at the lower end, is the house of Governor Bradford. Across the street is the store house, and then are the homes of Peter Brown, John



HOUSE OF WILLIAM BRADFORD

Goodman, William Brewster, John Billington, Isaac Allerton, Francis Cooke, and Edward Winslow. Between the house of Bradford and the ocean were the houses of Stephen Hopkins, John Howland and Dr. Samuel Fuller, while toward the hill lived Miles Standish and John Alden.

Pilgrim Homes. We have no authentic picture of the earliest cabins of the Pilgrims. We get a general idea from Bradford's Journal. Nineteen cabins had been planned but only seven or eight were built. These stood on Front Street, as it was then called, but which today is known as Leyden Street, the oldest street in New England. We have had our artist make a drawing of Wil-

liam Bradford's home from an old print. We believe it is correct. You will notice that it is surrounded by a palisade or high fence, which was made by driving tall stakes into the ground to prevent Indians from entering. The other houses were strung along on the opposite side of the street. Some of the dwellings must have held more than one family. We cannot tell you where Governor Carver, the first executive of the colony, lived.

Dress. The Pilgrims were very conservative in their dress and deportment. They cared little for beauty or personal adornment. They were plain, but neat, people. While their women did not wear silk gowns or even cotton dresses, they liked bright colors. Hence their clothing of woolen material was relieved by color effects. White was often displayed upon their arms, shoulders or chests. Linen was worn considerably in the summer by the women, and they often wore neat, white linen caps.

The men wore woolen coats and knee breeches but very few had starched linen. Only men of distinction and high social standing allowed their hair to grow long. Of all of these Pilgrims probably not more than Brewster and Winslow could claim descent from the nobility and they had been outlawed from good society. If we have been taught that the Pilgrims stood above all others of their day, this reputation was simply won by their unflinching honesty. To other Englishmen they appeared as very common and mistaken people. They may have admired their constancy, but they could not avoid ridiculing their conduct. Each class always judged themselves as right, so of course all others must be in the wrong.

The Mournful Winter. During the first winter the Pilgrims paid for their months of anxiety and worry, for their hardships and exposures, for their lack of nourishing food by months of sickness and death. More than half of their number was taken, and of only seven who

remained well Brewster and Miles Standish were the most prominent ones. Standish, the trained soldier of them all, willingly did a woman's work. He washed and cooked and made beds as readily as he would have gone into battle. His wife, Rose, was among those who helped to fill the burying ground at the top of the hill, where they all sleep in graves unmarked and unknown.

The Death Toll. This is a solemn list. It must have discouraged less firm and determined men and women, sick and dying in a strange land far from friends and kindred. The wonder of it is they met fate so calmly and hopefully. We find little if any murmuring. The most illustrious name to pass out in April, 1621, was Governor John Carver, possibly the noblest and most helpful man among them. His wife died a few weeks later, and they were buried side by side on Burial Hill. Bradford, still too ill to perform the duties laid down by Governor Carver, succeeded him, but was given an assistant in Isaac Allerton. Mrs. Allerton had been drowned in Provincetown harbor on their way to Plymouth Rock. The father of Mary Chilton had died about that time. The wife of Edward Winslow, a leader among the Pilgrims, passed out during that mournful winter. He married afterwards the widow of William White, the father of the first baby born in New England. The father, mother and brothers of Priscilla Mullins, about whom so much of romance has been written, died that winter. Many others passed out of whom we know little or nothing, but who deserve more mention.

Samoset's Welcome. All through that dreary winter of sickness and suffering no Indian had been seen, save a few at a distance. As the weather began to grow more spring-like and signs of the red men became more common, the Pilgrims, not knowing what the outcome might be, decided to make their situation show an appearance of defence. So three cannons, which they had brought

over in the Mayflower, were brought ashore and mounted upon the top of the hill. Surrounded by a rude fortress, this gave their little settlement a somewhat warlike appearance. Two smaller cannons had been mounted on the shore. All that they could do now was to watch and wait and hope.

Notwithstanding this defence, on the morning of March 16, 1621, a lone Indian, tall, straight and kingly in appearance, strode out of the woods and into the village. He was unclothed, except for his girdle, and he carried in his hands a long bow and two arrows. Frightened by his sudden appearance, the women—some of them at least—cried out in terror and fled. Thinking he was going to follow them into the house, some of the men, who had hastily grabbed their muskets, stepped into his path to stop him. The calmest one of the entire company, he extended his hand, saying in perfect English:

“Welcome, Englishmen!”

It is no wonder if the Pilgrims were surprised. Overcoming their fear of his presence, they found he could carry on a conversation in good English. He said his name was Samoset, and that he was chief of an Indian tribe at Monhegan, which is now in the State of Maine. He had obtained his knowledge of English from fishing parties of white men who had visited that coast. His claim to being a chief was clearly shown by his proud manner and erect carriage.

He explained the absence of the Indians by telling the Pilgrims of a great disease which had broken out among them and killed so many that only a few were left. These were very humble and helpless. He was certain Massasoit, their chief, would gladly make terms of peace with them. When Samoset went away he said he would return in a few days. He would bring Squanto with him.

Squanto had been across the ocean and could speak better English than he.

Samoset's Friendship. Samoset's friendship was genuine. When he went away reluctantly after one night spent at the home of Stephen Hopkins, he said he would return in a few days, accompanied by some of Massasoit's warriors. His "few days" proved the next day, when he came back with five strange Indians with him. They wore over their shoulders skins of deer, and they had long stockings on which reached to their bodies. Samoset now wore the skin of a wildcat on his arm, a badge of authority, to be compared to stripes or epaulets in the army.

The Indians with him wanted to trade, but it was Sunday and the Pilgrims refused to break in upon the Sabbath. Disappointed, the Indians ate and ate, and finally all went away but Samoset, who was so determined to stay that he said he was too sick to go. So he stayed until Wednesday, when he departed, saying he would bring Massasoit to make a treaty with the English.

Treaty of Massasoit. Samoset was as good as his word. Six days from his first visit he came back. He led proudly into the presence of the Pilgrims the great Sachem, Massasoit, and his retainers. This leader of the Red Men was then in the prime of life, a noble specimen of his race. He was tall, erect, proud and defiant, notwithstanding the fact that upon this occasion he was trembling and felt ill at ease. He and his men had left their bows and arrows behind them, and accustomed to the treachery of his dusky enemies, he was fearful lest all should be massacred by these strangers.

He was distinguished from his followers by a necklace of white beads made from bones. His tobacco pouch hung from this string at the back of his neck. His face and hands were liberally streaked with grease or oil, which made him to the white men unpleasant to

look upon. Yet his stern countenance bore a gravity and grandeur which marked him as a leader of men. There was a sincerity in his tone which told of his honesty.

His associates were all tall, athletic men, who were painted in garnish tints, running from red, black, yellow to white, and while some were clad in skins others were scantily dressed.



MASSASOIT'S TREATY

With this party came the chief Squanto, who acted as interpreter and friend of both parties.

Fortunately both sides were honest, with no thought of any underhanded act. Before the day was over one of the most important documents in American history had been drafted and properly signed. Mourt's Relation gives this resume:

1. That neither he nor any of his should injure, or do hurt to any of our people.
2. And if any of his did hurt to any of ours he should send the offender, that we might punish him.
3. That if any of our tools were taken away, when our people were at work, he should cause them to be re-

stored, and if ours did any harm to any of his we would do the like to them.

4. If any did unjustly war against him we would aid him. If any should war against us, he should aid us.

5. He should send to his neighbor confederates, to certify them of this, that they might not wrong us, but might be likewise comprised in the conditions of peace.

6. That when their men came to us they should leave their bows and arrows behind them, as we should do our pieces when we came to them.

7. Lastly, that doing this, King James would esteem of him as his friend and ally.

This treaty was kept according to the letter for over fifty years, or until after the death of Massasoit. His son, King Philip, succeeded him, and his mind having been prejudiced by false stories, he sought to break it.

The Pilgrims knew they had no right to insert the King's name in the document they drew without his consent. Had they been of a less serious nature, some of them must have smiled at the high-sounding words they used. These really meant nothing. Be that as it may have been, the King never knew. Both parties, the Pilgrims and the Indians, were faithful to the text, so the treaty remained unbroken.

Before leaving the Pilgrims, we wish to briefly describe how these people established themselves and maintained a trading post in the Province of Maine on the Kennebec River from 1627 to 1661. You must remember that the Pilgrims had incurred debts in England which must have been hard to pay from the resources in the countries.

Though few writers mention it, it must not be supposed the men remained all of the time strictly at home and raised their corn. They had at least brought with them on the Mayflower a shallop which they put together and sailed up and down the coast. It was a small sail

boat which we should call a sloop. They made two stronger sloops which they used in their journeys up and down the coast. In this way they were enabled to keep up a trade with the Indians and send home across the sea the money they owed.

Konsinic. So in the fall of 1625, after their first prosperous year, Edward Winslow organized two crews and loaded two sloops with corn and started with them up the coast upon a hazardous voyage. A deck had been laid over a part of the boat so the corn could be kept dry.

So on and on they sailed past Suguin Island, which had no lighthouse then, past Merrymeeting Bay into the mouth of the Kennebec River and came to an island which was the lodgment of a tribe of Indians. Here they were greeted with an Indian responsiveness and received by the friendly encampment of the native. Their corn was gladly received by the friendly Indians. The place was known as Konsinic and they took back with them seven hundred pounds of brown beaver.

These skins were sent to London, and anxious to continue their trade with the Indians, Isaac Allerton secured a grant or patent of land on the Kennebec, where they could control the trade in furs. The former patents had run to persons in England but this time it ran to William Bradford and a few of the leading men of the colony who were held as trustees of the Pilgrims until their debts should be paid.

So the Pilgrims of Plymouth became the owners of a large tract of land in the Kennebec Valley and traded prosperously with the Indian for a number of years.

In 1648 the Pilgrims built a trading post here and during the next year they received a patent for its final form. They continued to trade here, doing a good business until 1661.

CHAPTER II

THE GOVERNORS OF PLYMOUTH COLONY.

An Indian Tourist. Sounds singular, doesn't it? Yet Squanto was styled such. He was actually the first American tourist to Europe. He was, without doubt, the most interesting Indian ever known in New England. He could speak three languages and he was converted to three religions. He was the greatest traveler of the Red Race of his day.

Squanto made his first voyage across the Atlantic as a captive, with twenty others, under the rascally Captain Hunt, who was with Captain John Smith, when he made his trip of discovery along the New England coast in 1614. Hunt took Squanto and his friends to Malaga, where they were all sold as slaves. The wrong committed by the English captain reached the ears of a party of Franciscan friars, who caused Squanto and the other Indians to be freed. So Squanto lived for some time in Malaga, where he learned the Spanish language and walked the streets a free man.

Then an English vessel took him to Bristol, England, where the life was so different that he soon tired of it. He then walked to London, with a companion, a distance of over a hundred miles. In London he fell in with a wealthy man named John Slaney, with whom he stayed over a year. He mastered the English language. Slaney was interested in projects of colonization. As Slaney was a friend of Lord Bacon, so the great philosopher must have talked many times with Squanto, who could talk several different languages well.

Finally Squanto went to Newfoundland as interpreter for Slaney. On this trip he met Captain John Mason

and his wife. She was an ardent Episcopalian, and she converted Squanto to her belief.

Our hero next met Captain Dermer, an adventurous sea rover, who listened to his story with wonder, and finally decided to take him home to Great Britain with him. He stayed there over a year. In May, 1619, a little over a year before the Mayflower landed, he came to Plymouth, Massachusetts, with Captain Dermer and five sailors. Here Squanto was amazed to find every one of his people dead and the place deserted.

In sorrow he went back to Maine, or Monhegan as he knew it. But he soon fell a prey to home-sickness, and alone and on foot went to live with Massasoit and his people. It seems life a leaf from romance that this Red Man, who had lived among the white men in Europe and learned to like them, after six years of wandering, should have come back to Plymouth Rock to help welcome the Pilgrims.

The Pilgrims and the Indians. To explain this strange disappearance of a tribe, we shall have to repeat what we said in regard to a disease which had broken out among the Indians about four years before the coming of the Pilgrims. This may have been smallpox. Anyway it was so fatal that only one escaped, and he was hundreds of miles away.

Some of the historians have been inclined to say that Providence had not only cleared the land for them but had swept away its inhabitants. Frederick A. Noble declared:

"The door for entrance at Plymouth was more than ajar. God, in His own mysterious way had swung it wide open."

The Good the Indians Did. The friendship of Massasoit, Squanto, Samoset and the other Indians did not stop upon paper. They brought the whites maize, or corn as we know it, and showed them how to cultivate it

and explained its value as food. They told them of heating the kernels of maize until they would burst open and make "pop corn." They taught them how to dig clams on the seashore, and to catch eels by tramping them out of the mud. They told them of the use of berries, apples and grapes in their season. They told them how to cook the meat of the deer, bear, wild turkey and other creatures. All of this was new to the English, but when the harvest came they had reason to bless the Indians, especially Squanto.

As in the spring, the Wanderers (Pilgrims) had set apart a day of fasting and prayer, when they prayed for just such succor as the Red Men had given them, the little band of men, women and children had a day of Thanksgiving to which their dusky-hued brethren were invited in goodly numbers.

First Thanksgiving Day. At that feast, the original Thanksgiving Day, which is now observed all over the country, was held. The food consisted mainly of maize bread and cakes, Indian pudding, luscious cuts of deer meat, fish and, last but not least, wild turkeys, the whole enlivened with milk, butter and cranberries. Better than all of this was the genuine thanksgiving spirit which brightened it all.

Anecdotes of the Pilgrims. It may seem singular to look for anything that would bring a smile in the lives of the stern, austere Pilgrims. Yet there is the gleam of mirth occasionally, in their enforcement of the doctrine of what they deemed right. It was not uncommon to fine men for not attending church upon the Sabbath.

A Marshfield man was fined five shillings for "villifying the minister." A few years later a culprit was put in the stocks for the same offense. James Wiatt was given a sharp reproof for writing a business letter on Sunday, or "at least in the evening somewhat too soon."

The wife of the Reverend Ralph Smith, one of the

early ministers, remarked to her husband that she thought Mr. Gorton, who boarded with them and alternated in the daily prayer, made a better prayer than he did. This so irritated the minister that he tried to drive away the eloquent offender. He had him haled into court, where the minister was upheld. This so aroused the prisoner that he gave his opinion of the magistrate and also of Plymouth ministers in general. All of this cost him fifty pounds and banishment. He helped to found Warwick, Rhode Island, where he became very popular. Mr. Smith, on the other hand, was soon discharged from Plymouth, and his future history is lost.

Mary Chilton's Romance. Lovers of romance in speaking of the Pilgrims say that Mary Chilton was the first person to step upon Plymouth coast, and she was assisted by John Alden.

There is a boulder on Clark's Island, which had attracted the voyagers, where there are curious markings in the rock. These have been pointed out as "Mary Chilton's Footprints."

She did not marry John Alden or any of the young men of the original party, but she became the wife of John Winslow, the brother of Edward, who came over in the *Fortune* a year later. After a few years this couple removed to Boston, where she died and was buried in the King's Chapel burying ground.

Miles Standish. Among the Pilgrims was a warrior of small stature but who quickly proved that he was not to be judged by his inches. He was a native of Lancashire, England, born about 1584. He had belonged to a good family, but had been disinherited. So he was compelled to earn his livelihood as a soldier. In Holland he met William Brewster and William Bradford, who induced him to join the Pilgrims. Although scorning peaceful ways, he accepted, and it was fortunate for them he did. Not all of the Indians were peaceful. A tribe living

about twenty miles from Plymouth thought they had been ill-used by certain Englishmen. So they decided all of the Englishmen they could find should be put to death. The scouts of Massasoit learning of this informed the doughty little warrior of this uprising.

So Captain Standish was sent to quell the disturbance. Seeing so small a leader and judging that a man's ability to accomplish an object should depend upon his size, they laughed at the little warrior who sported a sword. Standish was offended at this ridicule, and before the Indians could rally to meet him he had put them to rout. So he was ever afterwards respected by his enemies without regard to his size.

The Courtship of John Alden. How many of you have read Longfellow's romantic "Courtship of Miles Standish?" So many have read it, and with so much pleasure, it would be difficult to make them believe it was only a poet's fancy. It gives us a bright glimpse of the stern life at Plymouth. We thank the warlike Captain Miles Standish for selecting so comely a lad to speak for him as the stammering, fair-haired John Alden.

We do not wonder the modest Priscilla Mullins, seated at her spinning wheel, became discomfited and ill at ease, while John waxed eloquent over the virtues of her aged suitor, until suddenly, with downcast eyes, she exclaimed:

"Why don't you speak for yourself, John?"

Dull indeed must have been the lover who could not take such a hint. Straightway honest John forgot his errand and found courage to speak for himself. She must have answered him "yes," for they were wed soon after, and no doubt lived happily.

Captain Standish did not seem to take his disappointment to heart if he had ever felt it, for it was not long after before a vessel reached Plymouth which brought him a wife. It is claimed she was a sister of his first

wife. He had probably sent her word to come. Sturdy citizens as they were, there was very little of romance in the lives of the Pilgrims, unless we say their whole adventure was a romance.



JOHN ALDEN AND PRISCILLA MULLIN

The Lost Boy. In August, 1621, the Pilgrims met with a scare. Young Edward Billington, a bold lad of fourteen or fifteen years of age, had wandered into the woods and got lost. As soon as this was known scouting parties began to scour the woods, and for a few nights little sleep came to most of them.

Edward proved to be a very brave boy. He did not allow himself to become confused, but he set forth in nearly a direct course, it was learned afterwards. He finally found himself at Buzzard's Bay. Here he met some friendly Indians. Instead of sending him to Plymouth, they forwarded him to the Nauset Tribe on Cape Cod. This was the same tribe that Carver and his men had taken the corn from during their exploration along the coast.

Word was sent to the Pilgrims that Edward was a captive among the Indians. This created considerable alarm. Captain Standish immediately organized a party of ten men, and these led by Squanto and another friendly Indian, all well armed, pushed boldly forth upon their errand. Caught in a thunder storm, they were glad to land at where Barnstable is now located. Here they met the chief of the tribe who had found Edward. The chief was friendly. The Indians gave them food and told them which way to go to find him. They sailed across the bay to Eastham, where they were to find Aspinet, the chief of the Nauset tribe.

Remembering their former conduct in taking the corn, the Pilgrims now became alarmed, when they saw a hundred warriors marching boldly along the beach. But their courage rose, when they saw the foremost was bearing upon his shoulders the lost Edward. All of the Indians had left their weapons on the sand.

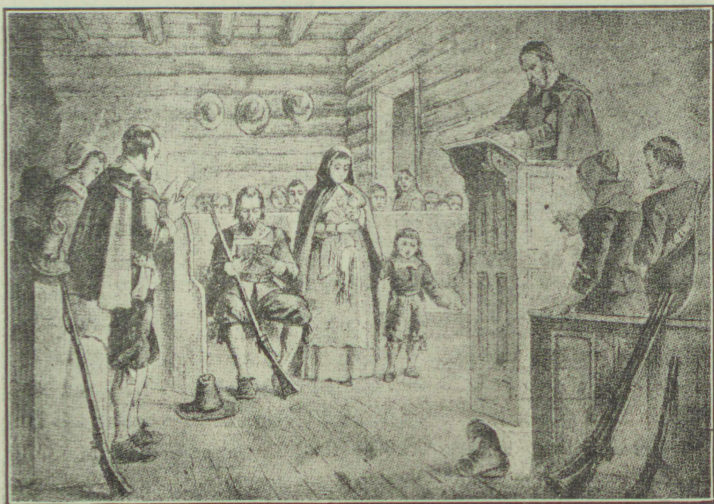
The meeting proved very friendly, and the Indians promised to remain on good terms with the whites. The Pilgrims gave Aspinet a knife and another was given the Indian who had informed them of Edward's fate. They also offered to pay Aspinet double the amount of corn they had taken, or give that amount to him if he would come and get it. Indian like, prompted perhaps by the desire to see how the Pilgrims lived, Aspinet came and got the corn. There was great rejoicing when Edward



INDIAN BOY CAPTIVE

Billington was returned to his folks, and he had a long story to tell of his adventure.

An Indian's Treachery. Soon after the war-party which had rescued the lost boy returned, news reached Plymouth that a certain petty chief named Corbitant, jealous over the peace of Massasoit, was trying to excite the smaller tribes to open war upon the English. To find out the truth, Squanto and Samoset were sent to learn what the situation was. The two were seized by



PREACHING TO THE INHABITANTS

treachery, tried and doomed to die. Samoset did manage to get away. He ran back to Plymouth with the startling news that Squanto was dead.

Again Captain Standish rallied his soldiers to the number of ten, and guided by a friendly Indian called Hobomak, they started to hunt down the traitor. Upon reaching Swansea this war-party found that Corbitant had boldly dared the wrath of Massasoit. He was then

camped at what is now Middleborough. It was a rainy day, but they came to Middleborough before night. They quietly surrounded the Red Men, and planned to surprise them at midnight.

It was a daring plan, but Miles Standish was not lacking for courage. When Hobomak demanded that the entire party surrender, excitement reigned. Several of the Indians fled, while the women and children threw themselves upon the mercy of the white men. One of the Indians upon being told that only Corbitant need be afraid, said that Corbitant had fled, but that Squanto was alive. Two muskets were discharged to frighten the Indians, which had the desired effect. Squanto was freed at once.

The next morning a thorough search was made, but Corbitant was not found. Captain Standish told them if they remained friendly it would be well with them and their leader. But to beware of further treachery. A man and woman who had been wounded went to Plymouth to be treated by their doctor. Nothing further came of this affair.

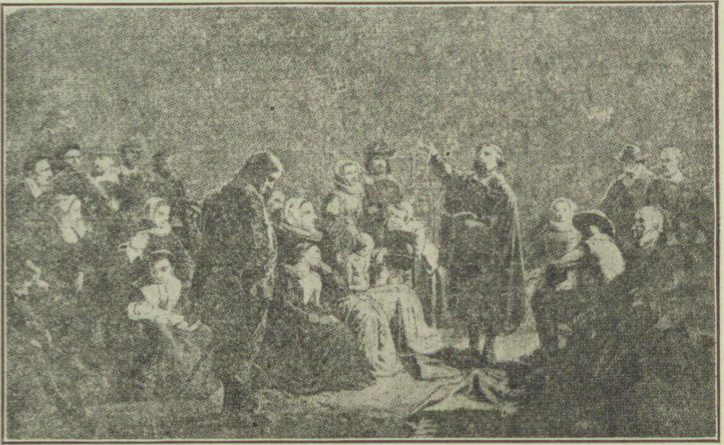
The Five Kernels of Corn. Some of you may have heard of the story of five kernels of corn, to illustrate the starvation which looked the Pilgrims in the face. There does not seem to be any proof to show that this condition really existed. But the fortitude of the Pilgrims does seem to have been sorely tested. First came the dread disease that visited them the first winter. Then came short crops and famine stared them in the face.

In April, 1623, more seed than usual had been planted and this gave promise of an abundant harvest until a summer drouth threatened to destroy their crop.

Six weeks of summer heat, without a drop of rain, and the green corn turned yellow and drooped. The beans looked as parched as though a fire had swept

through the field. For the first time, with starvation ahead, the Pilgrims seem to have lost courage.

A Day of Fasting and Prayer. In this hopelessness and despair, when the dry earth stirred by their feet enveloped them in its dust and their crops withered, they turned to God. They met on bended knees in the fort and prayed from morning until late in the afternoon. You may judge of their surprise and joy when they saw the sky, which had been clear of a cloud in the morning,



FIRST SERVICE UNDER A ROOF

show now evidence of rain. The heavens were overcast and before morning a gentle rain was falling. Their prayers had been answered. Two weeks of rain and sunshine saved to them their precious crops. From that time their troubles were behind them and never again did they stand face to face with disaster.

The Indian's Boston. The Pilgrims showed that they were not cowards. As soon as they heard of a tribe of Indians who were reported as unfriendly to them, they immediately started to visit these Red Men. Miles

Standish always led them and they were usually guided by Squanto, with other friendly Indians.

They went by shallop and they saw much that had been told them of the country. They saw the three hills spoken of by all. They saw the springs and deep rivers that today are buried under streets and buildings. They saw the deep woods which covered the land, the fine harbor, and cleared islands. If all this promising outlook awoke any feeling of regret that they had not landed



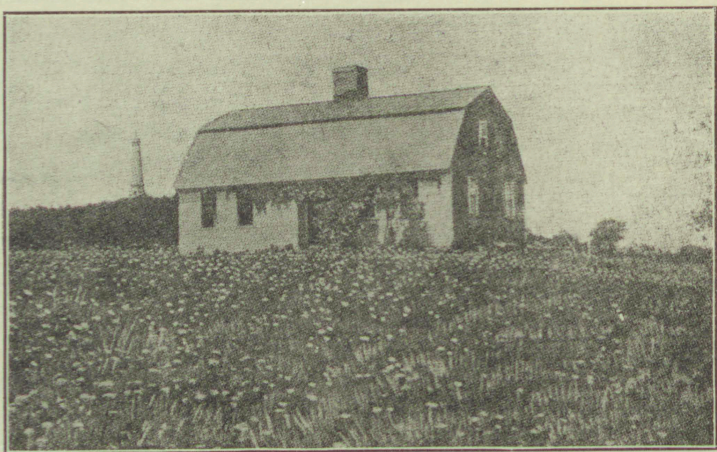
NEW ENGLAND INDIANS

there we cannot tell you. The Indians found here proved friendly and were associated with Massasoit. So they wandered idly through the woods where today a million people live and do business.

Bradford's Pilgrims. We style them by this term, though this is little more than a figure of speech. With the passing of the first generation of Pilgrims, the history of the little colony of British immigrants loses its pecu-

liar distinction of character. The sharp struggle against nature, the real trials for an existence had ended. The plot of a story to hold its interest must centre about suffering and sacrifice.

As this little band of men and women increased in numbers and mingled more and more with other people, they lost more and more of their personal qualities. As their prosperity expanded, as their population increased,



STANDISH HOME AFTER LEAVING PLYMOUTH

so we lose interest in them. The years from 1620 to 1630 appeal to us more than all of their history that follows. In 1692 Plymouth was taken into the greater colony of Massachusetts Bay.

John Carver, the first Governor of the colony, died the first spring, and his loss was severely felt. William Brewster, the spiritual head, lived until 1644. Edward Winslow left the colony that year to return to England, where Cromwell entrusted him with responsible offices. He died in 1655 in the West Indies. In 1656, Miles Standish died at Duxbury, where he had removed.

Governor William Bradford, in many respects the greatest of all the leaders of the Pilgrims, died in 1657, at Plymouth. Except for short intervals, he had been Governor from 1621 to the year of his death.

Bradford's Successors. On the Mayflower men who lived after Bradford's death only two need to be mentioned here. These were John Howland and John Alden. Thomas Prentice, who came over in the *Fortune*, succeeded Bradford, and, to a certain extent, took his place until his death in 1673. He was an able man, but was not the equal of Bradford. Under him the witchcraft delusion found a few supporters, but in the few cases tried, none of them obtained the support of the courts. So, when we speak or think of the Pilgrims, the names which come first into our minds are those wise councillors and leaders, Carver, Brewster, Winslow, Standish and Bradford.

Character of the Pilgrims. We want to say a few words about a character which is difficult to define. We have always judged the Pilgrims critically because we did not believe in their way of meeting the affairs of the day, according to our 20th century training. We were wrong there. In order to judge a man you must also take into consideration the surroundings which influence him. So, upon closer examination, we find much to admire. We find little to condemn, according to the light of their day.

We cannot forget the divine sacredness of their lives when they shook the tyranny of Old England from their garments and went forth into Holland. Our criticism rises to admiration, when we behold them taking all of the chances and adventure in the world. They trusted themselves in the little old *Mayflower*, manned by a profane crew under a profane captain, to cross an uncharted ocean, truly trackless in their day, and founded a new State in the western wilderness.

They sought an honest peace with the Red Men, and they kept their faith until the end. They bowed devoutly before their shrines of worship, but had common sense enough to depend upon the strong arm of the warrior, Miles Standish. The same firmness which was their shame—if you so name it—was their glory, the strength which brought them from Scrooby to Leyden, from Leyden to Plymouth. With all their faults, and we do not understand they are perfect today, we bow to them and Massasoit, as noble a Roman as there was among them.

The Governors of Plymouth Colony. The Governors of Plymouth Colony were, 1620, John Carver; 1621, William Bradford; 1633, Edward Winslow; 1634, Thomas Prence; 1635, William Bradford; 1636, Edward Winslow; 1637, William Bradford; 1638, Thomas Prence; 1639, William Bradford; 1644, Edward Winslow; 1645, William Bradford; 1657, Thomas Prence; 1667, Josias Winslow; 1681, Thomas Hinckley, who held his office, except during the interim of Andros, until the union of the Pilgrims and the Puritans in 1692.

It will be seen that for almost seventy-two years only six persons were at the head of the Pilgrims. Of this period William Bradford, the ablest and most influential, served twenty-six years, or over one-third of the time.

CHAPTER III

THE PURITANS

The Return of the Mayflower. As soon as the water was free of ice, the Mayflower was fitted up to return to



THE MAYFLOWER

the Old World. It was understood that anyone who wished might go back to Old England and to their former home. Let it be said to the credit of one and all, not

a single person had weakened. If the ordeal had been more trying than they had looked forward to they all had resolved to remain until the end.

Messages were sent to friends and relatives, and they always spoke lightly of the dark hours and hopefully of the future. All of them who could were invited to come to this New Plymouth in America. Here every man was the equal of his neighbor.

The Mayflower on her second voyage brought over recruits for the thinned ranks of the Pilgrims. A portion of these were not strangers to the weather-beaten colony waiting to welcome them on the shore of Plymouth Rock. So, year by year, the Pilgrims grew in numbers and in power.

We are sorry to confess that Squanto came near ruining the friendship between the Pilgrims and Massasoit. This was due to an unholy ambition for Squanto to become the successor of the great Massasoit. This plot was told by Hobomak to Governor Bradford, and the governor was advised to surrender Squanto to Massasoit. Governor Bradford did not doubt the word of Hobomak, who was as good a friend to the Englishmen as Samoset. As this offense was not against the Pilgrims but against his own Sachem, Governor Bradford did not like to betray his friend, Squanto. So he hesitated somewhat and offered one excuse after another. This angered the Indians, who were anxious to see the overthrow of the plotter, and they left in disgust.

Fortunately the matter was smoothed out. Massasoit came to Plymouth and his confidence in the Pilgrims made him forget any real or fancied wrong. It may have been well for the peace of all that the three friendly Indians, Samoset, Squanto and Hobomak, not one of whom were ever unfaithful to the whites, all died within three years.

The First Town Meeting. The first town meeting ever held in America, or anywhere else for that matter, took place in Plymouth, Massachusetts. Whenever any new movement was to be taken, a road was to be laid out, a bridge was to be built, or a schoolhouse was needed in Number 6, a public meeting was called. In that meeting the matter was talked over, until some course of action was formed and voted upon.

Once a year they met to elect a board of town officials, who were to conduct affairs until their successors were chosen. Each man voted as his judgment told him. In this manner the people enacted laws to govern them without feeling any burden or special opposition. The most important official was the Chairman of the Board of Selectmen of three or five members. Then there were the Moderator, who presided at the meetings; the Clerk and the Treasurer, with a number of lesser officers, such as the tithing men, road surveyors, collectors, justices of the peace, field drivers, etc., etc.

Later this form of local government was copied everywhere in Massachusetts. Then other provinces followed their example, until the idea had spread far and wide. Our national government is founded upon this same principle.

The Puritans. Now, while the Pilgrims grew slowly in number, year by year, we come to another class of Englishmen, who were soon to outnumber them. The colony of the Pilgrims was never large. Even in its later days its growth was slow. In 1630, the year of the arrival of the Puritans, the Plymouth settlement numbered only three hundred souls. In 1643, at the forming of the New England Confederacy, the population of Plymouth was less than three thousand. Yet its history was of decided importance in the affairs, not only of Massachusetts, but of American civilization.

These Pilgrims came before the Puritan host that ten years later, in 1630, under the leadership of John Winthrop, landed at Salem, a Biblical name meaning "peace."

Seventeen ships arrived that year, bringing over a thousand passengers. So fast did these people follow that within ten years more than twenty-six thousand had founded homes in Massachusetts. They styled themselves "the Massachusetts Bay Colonists." They took up their homes in "the Land of the Blue Hills," Boston and vicinity, on account of religious discord in their native



WINTHROP'S COMING

country. They claimed the English Church should be **purified**, from which came the name by which they are known in history as "The Puritans."

The Yorkshire Farmers. In the midst of this influx came another class of immigrants known as the Yorkshire farmers. This body of men and women did not come through religious oppression, or even difference. They belonged to the great middle class and came purely to improve their social and financial conditions. We shall hear little from them, though in the great plan of progress and prosperity they did perhaps more than either of the others.

The English in New England. John Fiske, the historian, remarks that no part of Old England was more thoroughly English than New England. Only on three occasions had other races come in during the hundred years covering this period. In 1652, after his home victories at Dunbar and Worcester, Cromwell sent over 270 Scottish prisoners to Boston. After the enforcement of the Edict of Nantes, a treaty of peace with France, in 1685, 150 families of Huguenots came to Massachusetts. Following the massacre of Londonderry, Ireland, came the Scotch-Irish refugees under Parson McGregor.

Trouble Begins for the Puritans. About eight hundred immigrants, the largest that had ever come at one time, together with horses and cattle, landed at Salem in 1630. Their leader, John Winthrop, was chosen Governor of Massachusetts. They soon began to build a town on the coast not far from Salem. This new town they named Boston, for the town by that name in their mother-land. In 1632 they built the first meeting house in Massachusetts.

While these colonists were a little less stern and rigid than the Pilgrims, they declared that Massachusetts should be for them alone. They seemed to think, with all of the land to be had for the taking, they should not be hindered in their religious observation by people having different views. So trouble soon began to come to them.

Roger Williams. Among the first to differ with these narrow-minded Puritans was Roger Williams. This man soon proved to have ideas in marked contrast to theirs. Roger was for greater civil and religious freedom. While the Puritans would not allow anyone to vote unless he belonged to the church, Roger Williams boldly declared every man should have the right. He believed also the Indians had certain rights of their own the whites should not take from them.

Roger Williams was located at Salem, and when in addition to the reasons given and others equally as bold and defiant, he said the church had no right to make a man attend divine worship, unless he wished to do so. He insisted that every one should do as he pleased. These outspoken beliefs disturbed the strict Puritans, and finding his room was preferred to his company, Roger Williams fled from his home and friends into the wilderness.

Roger Williams' Flight. He had known Massasoit and he now sought his protection. But the great Sachem of the Wampanoags lived on the shore of Narragansett Bay. This was a long way for a stranger to walk through the deep snows in mid-winter. Still it would have taken more than this to have stopped him. Wading through the trackless snow by day, when night came on he would cut pine boughs and make him a bed upon the white mantle of winter. When not kept awake by the howling wolves or other marauding animals, he would sleep until dawn. Then he would arouse himself, to partake of a few bites of meat washed down by water, to plod wearily on, mile after mile, where the solitude was shod with silence.

Finally, as the longest journey must have an end, he reached the wigwam of the great chief. Massasoit gladly took him in. Here he stayed until the snow had melted away in the spring. Then the religious outcast started forth to find him a place where he could make a home of his own.

When he had found a place to his liking, he bought the land of the Indians. Here he built him a log cabin home. He called this place Providence, because he believed that God's good Providence had directed his footsteps hither.

He then invited everybody who wished to do so to come there, where they could in reality be free men. He

was the first person in this country to place freedom of thought above the discipline of the church. The good fame of Roger Williams became known, and where he planted his cabin in the wilderness stands today the great and powerful capital of Rhode Island.

Settlement at Hartford, Connecticut. Already the spirit of unrest had begun to show itself among the Puri-



PLYMOUTH VESSEL PASSING HARTFORD

tans. Singular, isn't it? We think much of the progress and advance of civilization came from just such freedom of thought and action as was the impelling genius of these people.

The title they held over New England gave them an uncertain right to the country in the Connecticut River valley. So in 1635 Mr. William Pinchon of Roxbury, having adjusted his business so he could leave, resolved

to prove to his own satisfaction the truth of the stories which had come like songs of the sirens singing to him from the forest. He visited the Connecticut valley and was so pleased with the prospect he secured the promise of land from the Indians and went back home to get ready for his removal.

The Roxbury Party. He worked so rapidly that on April 26, 1636, he had twelve families ready to start on their long overland journey. Their household goods were sent by vessel at the same time. A deed by the Indians, conveying a tract of land, was signed and delivered July 15, 1636.

Hooker's Emigration. Reverend Thomas Hooker, pastor of the church at Newton, now Cambridge, was an eloquent preacher, but his sermons did not always suit the more close Puritans. So before he came here he was pursued in England and Holland, whither he had sought safety before coming to New England. Doctor Ames, an English divine, had said of him that "he had never met his equal, either in preaching or disputation."

Mr. Hooker talked this matter over with his congregation and the result was that May 31, 1636 he, too, started overland to Connecticut with most of his people. His wife rode on a horse litter. This party drove 160 cattle, and took with them most of their household goods. There were one hundred persons in this band of religious refugees. He was the first minister in Hartford, though he was quickly followed by the Reverend Mr. Stone. He was born in Leicestershire, England, and died in Hartford, Connecticut, July 7, 1647. The Apostle Eliot, of whom we shall speak soon, was an usher under him in England.

An Active Year. This seems to have been an active year for emigration, 1636. An association formed in Dorchester had pioneers in Windsor, Connecticut, just above Hartford, in June. This party was guided overland

by Roger Ludlow. Another party started later in the year, so late in fact that it found the Connecticut River frozen over, so they could not cross. They had sent their goods by the sea route, but as these had not come, they pushed down the Connecticut, until they met the bark Rebecca. About seventy, most of this party, decided to return to Boston Bay. They returned to Windsor, however, the following spring.

The Old Connecticut Road. This route to Hartford through Woodstock became known as the "Old Connecticut Road." Though not an Indian trail only a part of the way, it had been developed by the travel going in that direction by branching out from older paths. Within forty years this route was complete, so as early as 1680, there was a direct road from Boston to Hartford.

Reverend John Wheelwright. We now come to what the barefoot boy would say, as he hobbled to school, "thorns in his feet." Only these thorns were human beings, as bright as those who persecuted them. We think them a little advanced over their persecutors. But this is 20th century judgment, not the 17th. The trouble this time was with John Wheelwright. He was born in Lincolnshire, England, in 1594. He was educated at Cambridge, England, and settled over a church at Alford, England. He was displaced, which may not have been his fault. At any rate he came to Boston and was placed at the head of a church in what is now Braintree.

Very outspoken and with views not agreeing with the Pastor of the Boston church, the Reverend Mr. Wilson took exception to what he said. So he was haled into court in 1636-37, and there found guilty of conduct tending to treason. He was soon after banished. He went to Exeter, New Hampshire, as he named the town, where he stayed until Massachusetts claimed the province. He then went to Wells, Maine. After this he was allowed to go back to his former home. We do not know as he was very dangerous.

Anne Hutchinson. Of greater danger to the peace of the public mind was the sister-in-law of Wheelwright, Anne Hutchinson. She taught that the person of the Holy Spirit dwelt in every believer, and that the conscious judgment of the mind is to be placed above every other authority. An eloquent talker and a constant worker, it can be seen that she soon had awakened a bitter feeling. The entire Boston church, with the exception of five members, fell in with her teachings. Outside of Boston the churches were almost solidly against her.



ON THEIR WAY TO CHURCH

Bancroft said: "The dispute infused itself into everything." It stopped the enlistment of troops to fight the Pequots; it cast disrespect upon the judges in the courts; it even entered into the distribution of town lots; ay, into every act of daily life, until it threatened to destroy the courses of everyday living.

Anne Hutchinson was called into court to answer the eighty-two counts entered against her. Two days the affair was fought out in the courts, and then she was banished from Massachusetts.

Roger Williams invited her to come to Providence. She met with no opposition there. Under his advice she bought from the Indians the island of Aquidneck, since called Rhode Island. Her husband, who had stood faithfully by her, died in 1642, and she removed to Manhattan, now New York. The Dutch and the Indians were at war, and she fell a victim to the warfare. So perished a woman who lived and worked a hundred years too early in the history of the country.

We have seen the Puritans opposed by certain religious leaders. It mattered little to them if these rivals were right or wrong. These individuals, Roger Williams, Thomas Hooker, John Wheelwright, Anne Hutchinson and others that might be mentioned were banished and left the colony without making trouble. It was better for both sides.

Quakers. Now we come, not so much to persons singly, but to people making up a sect or creed. These were the Quakers or Friends, as they called themselves. The first of these came quietly and without a suspicion of harm. Then new trouble began. Four of their leaders were banished, as Roger Williams had been. Unlike him they refused to stay banished. Under pain of death they came back, and met their end without complaint. Sacrifice was one of the strong points of their belief.

With reason or without reason, the Puritans feared the coming of Quakerism. No doubt the Quaker was more radical than he is today. So was the Puritan for that matter. The Quaker recognized the authority of his conscience and was determined to uphold it. The Puritan did not accept this—at least from a Quaker. The Puritan government ruled that the coming of the Quaker spelled the downfall of both civil and the religious Commonwealth, which they had founded according to the will of God. So the court decided that no Quaker should be allowed within the province.

Nicholas Upsal of the Puritan church, who felt this law a hardship, declared against its enforcement. Upsal had been prominent in his church. This did not save him from being brought into court. In the face of the magistrate he boldly declared that he did not approve of the execution of the four victims who had suffered death. He said that the enforcement of the law would prove "the forerunner of judgment upon the country."

Upsal Banished. He was fined twenty-five pounds and banished. Though an old man, he traveled through the woods to Rhode Island, aided on his way by the Indians, who wondered at the white man's religion, with such cross-purposes.

Harsh Laws. Then came over from London on business Anne Burden, who was ordered back and went. Then Mary Dyer, on her way to join her husband in Rhode Island, came, was tried and would have been banished had not her husband, a man of note, stopped the proceedings. Next came Mary Clarke, and without a friend at court, she was given twenty stripes upon her bare back by a three-corded whip in the hands of a strong man.

New laws were passed and as quickly defied. Such punishments as banishment, branding, whipping, imprisonment, cutting off of ears, selling into slavery, hanging, all were tried and still the Quakers came! Finally a law making the appearance of the Quakers punishable with death was passed thirteen to twelve. This was the harshest law ever passed by the Puritans of Massachusetts Bay against persons whose greatest crime was to differ with them in religious expression.

Examples of the Law. This law was passed October 20, 1658. The following year three Quakers came to be tried under this judgment. The persons were William Robinson, Marmaduke Stevenson and Mary Dyer, the last named being the woman already mentioned. The

three were tried and all condemned to be hung. The men met this fate, but the woman was banished the second time. Again she returned in defiance of the law and was hanged on Boston Common, May 21, 1660.

Other men were tried and convicted. As many as twelve had been condemned to be hung. The opposition was growing against the law. Some friends of the prisoners dared to help them to escape. No one had the moral courage to try and bring these rescuers into court. The backbone of the law had been defied if not broken. So, after twenty years of persecution, twenty years of oppression which did not more than check the evil, if you call it such, brought about a milder feeling.

Witchcraft. As much as we would like to skip this episode in Massachusetts history, we feel obliged to mention briefly that stirring period known as "the days of Witchcraft." An educated man removed for an indefinite period to the solitude of the wilderness becomes imbued with a spirit of loneliness he cannot throw off. His own voice tells him of his solitude. His own hands show him his weakness. Alone with nature he is helpless. One or the other must surrender. Invariably it is man. With his kind he is strong; alone he is weak. So the closer he lives to nature, the closer he lives to life, which is but another name for mystery. With neither the time nor the ability to solve the secret he gives imaginary powers to the unsolved mystery.

Witches. Very early in the Bible we read of the warning: "Thou shalt not suffer a witch to live."

A witch was believed to be a woman who had made a pact with the evil one to ride through the air to meetings of kindred spirits. European history is filled with accounts of the burning of witches. It would not be strange if the traditions of the Puritans were full of such stories. We have heard persons very well educated tell us in serious tones of persons who had been bothered with

witches. Our folklore tales are stories of this kind and signs governed by the same mysterious influence.

So, out of a long, dismal winter, shut within themselves to their petty and quarrelsome arguments, it was quite easy to make out an excuse for the simple inhabitants of Salem village, now included in the town of Danvers, the dark story of Salem witchcraft.

Mr. Samuel Parris was the minister of the church where the unhappy stories started among the children. The physician to whom the matter was referred to, for the want of a higher judgment, declared the young people were bewitched. These children, when pressed for an explanation, said it was due to Tibuba, a slave belonging to Mr. Parris. This slave, half Indian and half Negro, was himself superstitious and full of fearful tales hanging upon the border of sorcery. So he only served to deepen the tragedy.

The excitement increased. Before the ill wind had been purified by the autumn gales twenty men, women and children, some of them belonging to the educated class, had been put to death. The scare did not stop until Lady Phipps, wife of the Governor, Mr. Willard, minister of the Old South Church, and Mrs. Hale, wife of the minister at Beverly, had been accused. The husband of the last, who had been active in condemning witches, now opened his eyes to his mistake. He stood stoutly by his wife. Outside influence had begun to be felt. Nothing will break down an argument like ridicule. So the people of Essex County, where the delusion had largely existed, was cleared of the foul air of superstition.

CHAPTER IV

GOVERNORS UNDER THE CHARTER

Puritan Traits. We have seen through the 17th century eyes the Puritans in their strength and in their weakness. We have seen this very same weakness which caused them to hang Quakers and burn witches, the same strength which had enabled them to bid defiance to the king and brave the perils of the deep.

Idealism was the foremost trait in their character. This, if founded upon resolution, sacrifice and firmness, combined, is pretty certain to foment extreme ideas. These may develop into wild notions. The Puritan character must have had this prompting of idealism. Else they might not have formed their first resolution.

We see evidence of this in their treatment of those who dared to contradict the petty beliefs of their minds. We doubt if we could have received any higher results from Roger Williams or any of those they banished; or from any of those whom they hung. This weakness was their strength; their glory as well as their shame. Without this make-up there would have been no Puritans, and being no Puritans there would have been no State—no Republic—in Western World. Would we have it different we must wait until men are created perfect. This may never be. Reverend E. E. Hale sums up the situation thus:

“Self-sacrifice and resolution, idealism and strength of purpose are noble qualities. But it is rare in this world to find idealism, which has not some touch of intolerance. When wisdom fails a resolute man so that right appears to be wrong, he becomes what we call intolerant.

“Now that Puritan character had in it the element of intolerant fanaticism cannot be denied by one who re-

members Anne Hutchinson, Roger Williams, John Clarke, Mary Dyer and John Norton. It is the same strength which is their shame. Lacking one they would have lacked the other. Had not the Puritans been men who came to be willing to maintain their ideals even by hanging innocent men and women, they would have submitted at once to oppression in England and never been heard of there or elsewhere."

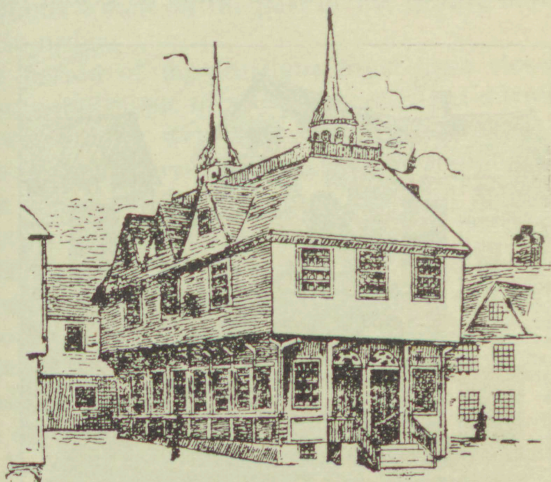
The Puritan Sabbath. You and I have seen much written of the Sabbath in Old New England. We have read of the Blue Laws, and a few of us have seen the New England Primer. The Sabbath or Lord's Day began at sunset upon Saturday, so the people could make proper preparation for the day of worship just over the dark horizon of night. No kind of work could be done during that period. One mustn't walk from town to town, do any work that could be put off, to go into common houses or places to drink. Sport was firmly forbidden. We have heard of the case where a minister refused to baptize a child born upon Sunday.

It was a serious offence to be absent from church without a good excuse. Constables were appointed to look out and see every one was promptly on hand. Every one's conduct was closely watched. Good Captain Kimball of Boston, upon returning from a three years' absence at sea and meeting his wife upon his door-steps boldly kissed her where he was seen by his neighbors. For this "lewd and unseemly behavior" he was called into court and there sentenced to "set two hours in the public stocks." He was found guilty of two offences: He had "prophaned" the Lords' Day and kissed his wife "publicquely" on the Sabbath.

Meeting Houses. Provision was always made for a "house of worship" in every grant of a township. This meeting house was a prominent building in town. The earliest meeting houses were very plain buildings, and

frequently unfinished for years. There was no way of heating them, except as foot-warmers were used by the more wealthy. Usually the public stocks and the whipping post were placed in the yard in front of the meeting house.

The pulpits were only a high table or desk, upon which stood the hour glass, which had to be turned at regular



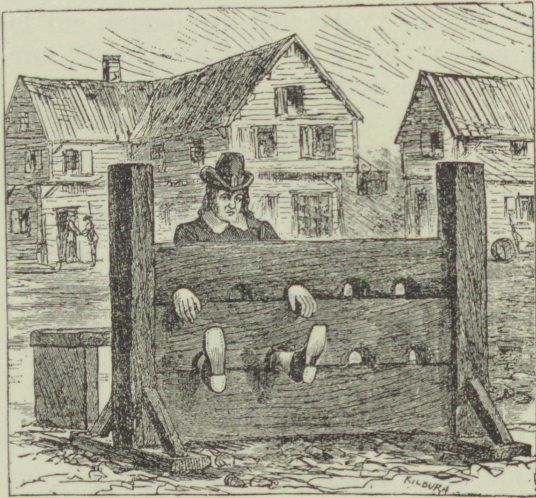
FIRST TOWN HOUSE IN BOSTON

intervals in order to keep track of the passage of time. Sometimes a sounding board was hung over or behind the pulpit. In front of the pastor were seats for the elders and in front of these the seats for the deacons. The pews in the first meeting houses were merely benches without cushions.

The Stove in Church. The story is told of the meeting house in which a stove was placed after considerable objection on the part of a good number of the parishioners. The first Sunday after this had been done proved to be warm so no fire was built. The wife of a deacon, who

had earnestly opposed its introduction, upon coming to church and thinking the fire was burning became uncomfortable from the heat which she imagined came from it, until she was overcome and fainted from the heat of her imagination.

Then a member who had worked to have the stove put in entered the church and walked briskly up to the innocent stove and stood by it, while its genial heat sent



METHOD OF PUNISHMENT

thrills of warmth up his benumbed limbs. Finally, when he parted the skirts of his great coat and held out his hands to feel the heat, the congregation, which had been watching him, could stand no more and one and all burst into a roar of laughter.

The Call to Church. It was several years before any of the churches felt able to own a bell. The summons was made by the beating of a drum or blowing of a horn. In many respects Sunday was the most dangerous of all the days in the week. The Indians knew of the habit of

attending church on this day, so they frequently planned to make their attacks on the homes of the people. It was nothing unusual for the men folks to carry their firearms to meeting with them.

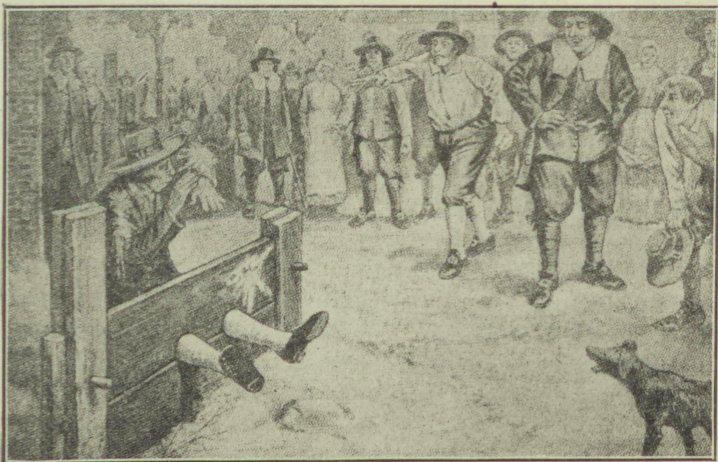
Upon reaching the meeting house the men took seats on one side and the women on the other. The boys were seated upon the steps of the pulpits or in the gallery. The Puritan boys were healthy and active and it required a continuous watch on the part of the tithing man to keep them in order.

The period of the Puritans must have closed before instrumental music of any kind was used during church service. Fiddles were first used, and there was a case where this was played upside down to soothe the feelings of the congregation, most of which had opposed its introduction.

A Biblical State. Whatever other fault or shortcoming they may have had the Puritans were sincere in their religious belief. For fifty years and more they struggled to establish a Biblical State. Their leaders were able and educated men. The ministers who came over in the few years after the granting of the charter were among the most learned men of the age. Hooker and Cotton came in 1633, Shepherd and Norton and Richard Mather in 1635. Nearly one hundred men joined the colony at Massachusetts Bay from England between the years 1630 and 1647. All were University men and two-thirds from that Puritan plant, Cambridge.

They were all men of fearless mind and will which would brook no opposition. In fact, most of them had been driven from England and came here to speak their feelings and carry out their religious intentions. Their isolation from the rest of the world served to unite them more firmly together than men could be welded in this cosmopolitan day. Again the educated few held a strong hold over the others. We see this shown in the case of

Hooker, whose entire congregation followed him into the wilderness. The parting of the Pilgrims from their beloved pastor, John Robinson, throws a mellow light upon the harsh proceedings of the immigrants. But, with all of this learning, of this fiery oratory, of this selfish example of power, Puritanism was beginning to wane. Before we reach the end of this book we shall see why.



A WAY OF PUNISHMENT

The Oldest Meeting House. The oldest church in New England, which has been in constant use for that purpose, was built at Hingham, Massachusetts, in 1681. This church was not heated for nearly one hundred and fifty years after it was built. No stove was used in it until almost one hundred years ago.

Governor John Winthrop. Born in Groton, England, John Winthrop has been styled "the Washington of Colonization." When his life shall have been written adequately, he will be recognized as a leading factor in American history," said John Fiske. He did not come to



JOHN WINTHROP

New England at the beginning of winter, as the Pilgrims had done, but he came at the beginning of summer, in the month of June, 1630. After a short stay in Charlestown, he moved to a farm lot in Boston, where now stands the granite post-office building. The colony of which he was the prime mover became very successful, and he was its Governor, magistrate and

soldier for twenty busy years. The mistakes of the colony were not his, though he felt obliged to accept them with certain reservations. He was a wise statesman, yielding to the policy of the majority, trusting all would end well.

He had let Roger Williams go with regret. He had agreed with Thomas Hooker that it might be better for him to seek new fields of labor. We cannot think he was exactly gentlemanly in his conduct bearing upon the treatment accorded to Anne Hutchinson, but it is not for us to say. He did not agree with Sir Henry Vane, but above his personal welfare he placed the good fortune of the Massachusetts Bay Colony. He died in 1649, though only in his 61st year, honored and respected as the great-hearted Governor, whom many were proud to call "The Father of Massachusetts."

End of the Commonwealth. We now come to a change of government. For fifty-six years the people of the Commonwealth of Massachusetts had appealed in good faith to the King of Great Britain. Whatever they had done had been done in the King's name. And yet, for

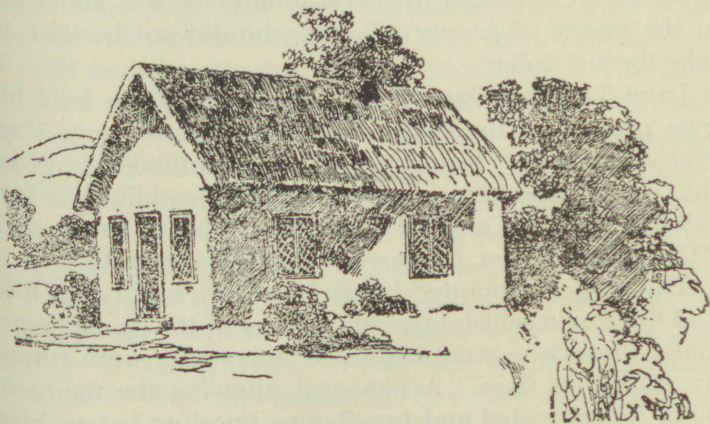
over half a century, they had elected their own officers; enacted their own laws and obeyed them. They had fought a bloody Indian war, King Philip's, and suffered great loss of property as well as of life. They were paying these bills without a murmur. Two disastrous fires in Boston, one in 1676 and the other in 1679, had dealt a big blow against the capital.

Enemies had sprung up in the colony. These were calling for a change in the government. These demands had reached the ears of the King. The time had come when he needed money and help outside of England. The charter should be annulled. Another should be made which would strengthen his power over these distant people and be made more powerful. As usual the King found it easy to do what he wished. The charter was revoked. That precious document, to which the colonists had clung so long and hopefully, was now of no more value than so much waste paper. The Commonwealth was declared at an end. The charter overthrown, the General Court trampled under the feet, nothing but ruin was left of the Commonwealth. This was October 13, 1685.

A Royal Governor. As an excuse, the people were to be given greater personal liberty. To get this in place of a Governor elected by the Commonwealth and of their numbers, the King was to send them over a royal Governor. Instead of worshipping God according to their own wishes, an Episcopalian minister in his robe was to read the Book of Common Prayer in their own South Church in Boston. They might mingle in this or the Puritan congregation must stand in the street and wait until the others had finished before they could enter their own meeting house. The greater liberty they were to receive meant that they should be the servants of the royal Governor. With the death-blow struck at the Commonwealth by the King the seed of independence had

been sown. It might take a hundred years for it to grow and ripen into a development of a republic. But the Puritan republic was at an end.

The Conduct of Andros. Governor Andros was so profuse in his promises to the Puritans and he expressed so much desire to please all, that for a time the inhabitants were deluded into the belief it was not going to be so bad after all. This did not last long. Andros threw off his disguise. One of his first acts was to levy a tax to pay the expenses of the government. The minister of Ips-



FIRST HOUSE IN BOSTON

wich, John Wise, and several of the inhabitants, were thrown into jail for opposing this tax. At the trial Judge Joseph Dudley scoffed at the defendants, when they offered as their defense certain privileges as English subjects.

“You are fortunate that you are not sold as slaves. Whom of you has the authority to say how much money the King may need?”

Some of the prisoners were denied the right to hold office, and not one dared to deny the right of the royal

party. The General Court was abolished, and town governments were ignored.

"Towns?" asked Governor Andros in reply to a committee from Lynn, "there is no such thing as a town in the whole country."

High fees were exacted for small offenses, and almost every move was made an offense. The men appointed to collect these fees quarreled among themselves. Spies were everywhere present. All county courts were removed to Boston. So people living in far parts of the province were forced to travel long distances, and were at the mercy of greedy officers, who did not hesitate to take the last dollar.

Land Titles in Danger. No one was safe to hold his own property. Indian titles were worth no more than "the scratch of a bear's paw." Andros made his boast that every inhabitant of Boston would be obliged to forfeit their claims and take out new titles at great cost. "These will render the government great profits."

The judges appointed by Andros were faithful to him and their own selfish interests. Many of the people, especially those who were boldest if not wisest, were ruined by enormous fines. A new seal, showing the figure of King James seated and two figures kneeling before him, one offering him tribute and the other tending him a petition, bearing an insulting motto, was adopted.

Andros Deposed. So matters went from bad to worse, until gloom shadowed the lives of the Puritans. All seemed to have been lost. Then in 1689, news came over that the people of England had rebelled. The Prince of Orange had now come to the front. Exulting over this bit of news, the people of Massachusetts rose in arms, and deposed Andros. He was captured while trying to escape in woman's clothes, and thrown into prison. Two of his staunchest supporters, Randolph and Dudley, were imprisoned also. An independent government was set up

for five weeks. But the new King, while more in sympathy with the colonists, was far from feeling like allowing them a republican form of government. Other kings followed who were even more jealous of this growth of a free government, as we shall see.

Fifty Years of Changes. Many changes had taken place during the fifty-six years of the Commonwealth. The population had so increased that by the close of the fifty years there were about forty thousand people. These inhabited sixty towns. In the rural regions large sections of land had been cultivated and were well stocked with domestic animals. There was an abundance of fruit and the standard of living had risen. The people were not only enjoying the comforts of wealth, but had begun to look forward to luxuries. They were living in better houses, dressed better and had better furniture than the early comers could possibly have obtained.

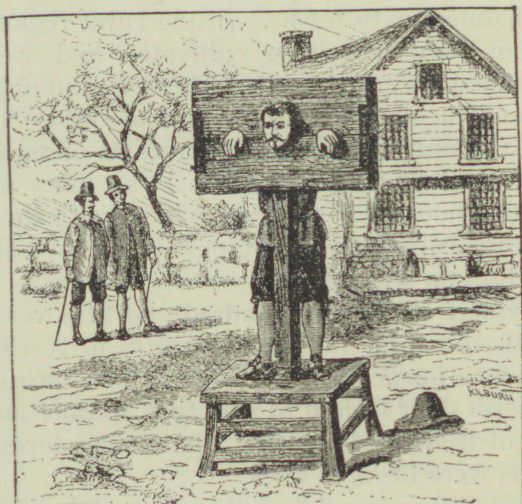
Massachusetts was already proving herself as a maritime province. Over five hundred and fifty vessels had been built, and these ranged from fifty to two hundred and fifty tons burden. These vessels were crossing the Atlantic with their freight of fish, furs, lumber and other products of trade and industry. In return stores of foreign goods were brought back.

Changes of People. All of the old leaders of thought and people had gone. We miss not only Carver and Bradford and Standish, but Winthrop and Endicott, and the preachers Hooker, Cotton, Whitefield and Norton have all passed away. Their teachings, too, have lost much of their duty to man and God. Says Drake, "Everywhere the too rigid austerity of the social and religious life of the Puritan pioneers had given place to a freer and more unrestrained play of the social forces."

The Republic. England ever seemed to hold to the misguided idea that to keep her colony under her control she must keep her weak. So laws were enacted to bring

about this end. Her manufactures must be limited, her commerce must be crippled, her freedom must be bonded. All of these years a republic was growing, if darkly at first, with increasing light as the years rolled on.

In 1692 a union was effected between the Puritans and the Pilgrims. In union was found to be strength. When the time came there was found a broader reason than the charter ever held. In fact, a broader foundation was se-



THE CULPRIT

cured upon which to base a republic than any charter ever given by an English monarch. And this republic planted in Massachusetts expanded and so came to embrace all of New England—ay, all of the UNITED STATES OF AMERICA.

Governors Under the First Charter. The Governors of Massachusetts Bay Colony were twenty in number and usually men of ability. 1629, John Endicott; 1629, John Winthrop; 1634, Thomas Dudley; 1635, John Haynes;

1636, Henry Vane; 1637, John Winthrop; 1640, Thomas Dudley; 1641, Richard Bellingham; 1642, John Winthrop; 1644, John Endicott; 1645, Thomas Dudley; 1646, John Winthrop; 1649, John Endicott; 1650, Thomas Dudley; 1651, John Endicott; 1654, Richard Bellingham; 1655, John Endicott; 1665, Richard Bellingham; 1673, John Leverett; 1679, Simon Bradstreet, who with the exception of the administration of Sir Edmund Andros, continued in office until 1692, when the royal Governors began. In the sixty-two years of the first charter it will be seen that only eight different Governors ruled. Of these, as far as ability and interest in the colony was concerned, John Winthrop leads.

CHAPTER V

INDIAN WARS

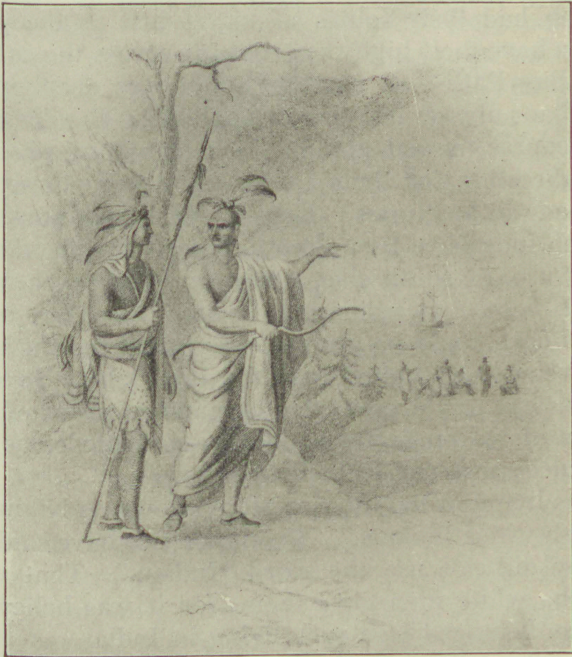
Indian Traditions. Behind these historical days of the Pilgrims and the Puritans wandered a scattered and broken race, the American Indians. They had no written history. Their pen was the tongue; their tablets, fragments of tradition, overhung with the silver foam of superstition. There rings the hue and cry of battle. Above all else the yells of victors, the wails of the defeated.

From out of the depths of these forests came tales of plenty, or groans of hunger, when famine ruled the land. Came stories of faithful lovers and false friends; of hunting and fishing, of warring and peace-making, of burning the undergrowth in the wilderness to clear the land for another year's crops. This is a dusky tale of dusky men and women. We cannot vouch for a single word, but it is an interesting story. It takes us back hundreds of years, though now we can travel no roads, find no homes, nor see a single civilized feature. It is a realm of romance, and he who tells its story is the king of romancers. His stories portray THE AMERICAN NIGHTS ENTERTAINMENT, which out-leaps the wildest dream of the mysterious master of the Arabian Nights.

Indians of Massachusetts. The native Americans of the Old Bay State belonged to what has been known as the Algonquin people. These were divided into several smaller families or clans. As the white people, their successors, were more numerous in Massachusetts than in other sections, so the American Indians were more often to be found here. They hunted and fished and roamed along the sea-coast. They followed the banks of her

silvery rivers; they scaled her mountains and their war-whoops awoke the solitude of her wilderness. If they did not build roads, as the white race does, they trod through the forests along their paths.

The Old Bay Path. For the convenience of the Indian tribes living in different parts of the country trails or



INDIAN NIGHTS ENTERTAINMENT

paths were followed year after year, as roads are traveled today. So the Nipmucks, or "Fresh Water Indians," living inland, went by certain routes in making their visits to the sea-shore. This same path would be followed by the Massachusetts Bay Indians in going west and returning. These trails were followed in times of peace and in war alike.

Well-known among these roads was the "Old Bay Path," which wound through valleys and over the hills from the sea-shore to the Connecticut River. From this point this well-worn path connected with the Mohawk Trail. This route led into the country of the Mohawks, and then, known as the Iroquois Trail, it went into the west until it reached the Great Lakes. So you see the Red Men had their routes of travel just as the people of today have their highways running across the country.

The Bay Path was narrow, but it was deeply worn. The Indians always traveled in single file. The direct line of the course proved that the Red Men were posted as to the direction for them to go. Nor were these journeys made in loneliness. They led past wigwams, some of which may have been empty, but always the door on the leeward, or south side, was open. Whoever wished stopped here. Occasionally a stone mortar, where parched corn could be ground, was found for the use of the traveler, who halted here for the night. No doubt these ancient wayfarers rested here in the wraps of skins or mats of woven feather robes as contentedly as their white successors rest in their taverns.

Tribes living in the interior were known as Nipmucks, or "fresh water Indians." We should not have said that, for they did not use the word "Indian." That was a name the white men gave them, for it was believed at first they belonged to a race living in India.

A certain tribe was known and spoken of as the "Pequods or Pequots." This confederacy ranged from the Thames River in Connecticut to the Rhode Island border. They were the most warlike body of Red Men in Southern New England. West of them were the Mohegians, a shattered branch, headed at one time by the gallant Uncas. To their east were the Wampanoags, led by the courtly Massasoit. To the north were a confederacy of the Penacooks under the leadership of the kingly

Passaconaway. This was the most advanced tribe in New England, with their lodge fires up and down the Merrimack River, which they held as their territory. To the east of them and in the valley of the Saco River the Sokoki had their rendezvous. They were another fierce tribe, who seemed to revel in war. Besides these were smaller tribes, some of whom we shall hear from.

In the valley of the Mohawk River lived the best fighters of them all, the Mohawks. These were one of the tribes making up the Six Nations, the confederacy that ranked highest in the qualities which go to found civilization. These Indians cultivated hundreds and hundreds of acres and owned vast orchards, which reached for miles along the fertile meadows of the Genesee.

Most of these tribes had taken their hunting grounds and waters in some hard-fought war and held to them through the years. Many of the different tribes were at war with each other. Often the smaller bodies would unite and wage war upon some old and larger tribe. Though they may have sprung from the same ancestry, most of the tribes spoke different languages.

The Men. The men of this race were tall and erect of figure. Their skin looked as if it had been bronzed by long exposure to the sun and weather. Their hair was coarse and straight. This was cut away from the sides of their head, only a narrow belt being left on the top. Into the band of hair would be stuck the feather from an eagle or a hawk. The faces of all the men under middle life were perfectly smooth of beard. They wore little clothing, and this in leggins, frocks, blankets and tunics easily made. These garments were made of the skins of animals or feathers from the birds.

Women. The young women were often pretty and attractive. This comeliness left them early in life. They married young and soon after lost the beauty of youth. It has been said that they led a dull, dreary life. But no

more so than their husbands. If they made the moccasins and snow-shoes for their husbands; if they tended the corn by day and watched it by night to keep away the insects, their husbands hunted the game from sun to sun, fished in the streams and fought the wars. We do not think there was much difference.

Schools. The schools of these people were the hunting trails. Their books were the deer-skin parchments upon



THE INDIANS

which the wise Red Men had traced in rude pictures stories of the flight of enemies or their own defeat. These were done with such a cunning hand that they were easily read. These pictures were the nearest to the written word they had.

They kept their records by symbols on the wampum belt, or they were traced in pictures on the tanned skin of some wild animal. News of war was flashed abroad by the flaming torch swung from a mountain peak to

mountain peak it might be for a hundred miles. In times of peace the women would signal for a long distance their messages, it might be of love, by building a fire upon a hill-top, and by cunning movements of her blanket, she would send afar her smoke signal, the thoughts she wished to send.

Weapons. Their sole means of attack or defence were huge war-clubs made from dry wood, the bow and quiver of arrows, a knife made from some hard stone, or spear tipped with stone. As soon as the English came they began to get possession of their firearms. The English tried to keep them from the Indians but it could not be done a great while.

Animals. The Red Men were cunning hunters, when they needed food. They did not hunt for sport. They did not fish for fun. All they did was done because it had to be done for them to live. So they pursued the fleet-footed deer from sun to sun, or until they had tired him out. Now and then a white deer was to be seen, but no dusky hunter dared to kill him. This creature was held in reverence by him.

Of the other animals here with them were the gaunt wolf, long, lean and forever hungry. There was a smaller creature, something like it, the wolverine. He was scarce. The lissom panther and the snarling catamount were more often seen. With these were the black bear, the rich-coated beaver, the raccoon, the otter, mink, muskrat, weasel, and half a hundred others.

The Wild Turkey. Among the feathered denizens of the woods, not one was more highly prized for its rich meat than the shy turkey. An old turkey gobbler strutting through the forest at the head of his brood, with head lifted high as he marched on, was a beautiful sight. The rapidity with which he and the hen could get out of sight at the first alarm of danger, with their young turkeys, was amazing. Another beautiful bird was the

snowy swan, a close rival in all of the qualities of wild life to the turkey. High in the air circled to and fro, sailing with almost motionless wing from his high erie on some mountain crag, came and went the great bald eagle. Besides these were many smaller birds and fowl.

Song Birds. The Indians listened to few of any metrical merit. The whip-poor-will's sad notes awoke the silence of the primeval swamps. The song birds came with the civilized people.

Agriculture. The Indians were better agriculturists than they have been given credit for. The Pennacooks, who lived in the Merrimack River valley, and other tribes cultivated patches of maize, or Indian's corn, melons which resembled our squashes and a grain similar to our buckwheat. A kind of potato was raised, which if small had a sweet taste. Strawberries grew large and luscious on the borders of their clearings, and blueberries, elderberries and various kinds of plums were to be had for the picking. The apple and wild pear were not uncommon. Grapes were so plenty that when the Norsemen came in the 10th century they called the country Vine-land.

Wildwood Life. The children of these simple people played at hunting the deer in the shadow of the wilderness. They were early taught the mysteries of the wildwood. They painted, they warred, they loved, they married, they hunted and smoked the pipe of peace with the old men in the council. They found the greatest pleasure in the forest festival. They satisfied their appetite at the feast and were contented. They endured days of fasting without a murmur. They gave no thought to the future. So, in the charity of their simple faith, according to their light, theirs was not an unhappy lot.

Origin. Better scholars than we have tried in vain to find an argument to show their origin, and every shred of evidence has been disputed. Not one relic, imple-

ment or inscription proving their place of nativity has been found. So let us take them as we find them, a rude, unlettered race, honest in their friendship, treacherous in their enmity. They live now only in memory.

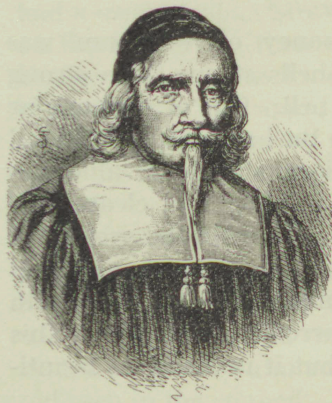
Indian Coin. Can you think of a people with any degree of intelligence who does not have some means of barter? By that we mean a kind of money with which to pay for what they wished to purchase. We, a civilized people, have what we call currency or money. We use this money to help us transact business. We want a certain object, so we offer the owner so many cents or dollars, according to its value. The trade is made and both parties are satisfied. The Indian's exchange of value was called by them **wampum-peage**. The English knew this as wampum or peage, as they chose. More often it was wampum.

Wampum. The Indian's money or wampum was made by the women. It was shells strung on a strong string, or made in the style of a belt. One of the popular places to find these shells was on the beach of Long Island Sound. They were of three colors, and their value was estimated by their color. The brighter and clearer the hue the more valuable the shell became in the eye of the Red Man. Its value, or its worth as an exchange, was shown by its use in high ceremonials. It is the same with us. We base the rate of our currency upon gold. This is not only the hardest to find but it is the most beautiful. So it must be worth more.

When the Indians made a treaty the sign or proof of the trade was a wampum belt. This was given as a token of remembrance of the agreement. When several articles were exchanged so many wampums passed from one hand to another. These belts were usually kept in the hands of the parties making the trade. No marriage ceremony was complete without an exchange of wampum belts between the ones mostly interested.

As singular as it may seem in our day of crowded cities, the Massachusetts Bay colonists soon began to complain of being "crowded." There was not room enough for them. So they began to push out into the wild country.

The Pequot War. When the English immigrants began to hear of the beauty and fertility of the Connecticut valley, we have told you how Pastor Hook and his people emigrated there. They were followed by others. But these new settlers found themselves confronted by the warlike Pequot Indians. This tribe ranged from the Thames River in Connecticut along the shore of Long Island Sound to the border of Rhode Island. In the time of war they roamed as far north as the Deerfield valley.



JOHN ENDICOTT

These Indians began by attacking the vessels sailing along the Sound coming or going in behalf of the settlers. So the Connecticut inhabitants began to fear the Pequots, who grew bolder, day by day. So John Endicott led an expedition against the Indians. Thirteen Pequots were killed and forty wounded. Still the war went on, until thirty of the English had been killed before the winter of 1636-37 was over.

A Massacre. The Puritans under Endicott had led in this warfare. They had seemed to give the Pequots a sufficient lesson to stop them from further assaults. But it had not. So now the white settlers appealed to the Puritans for aid. Ninety men were quickly equipped and sent to the rescue.

This expedition was led by John Mason and Underhill. They resolved to surprise the Pequots by marching through the Narragansett country. It was hoped these friendly Indians might be induced to join them. This body of men landed in Narragansett Bay at the foot of what is now called Tower Hill. The force of the English was increased by sixty Mohicians, who joined them and four hundred Narragansett Indians. They marched westward across the State of Rhode Island (it was not a State then) and fifteen miles into the Pequot country. Now the invaders suddenly found themselves close upon an Indian fort. At least they called it a fort. It has been described as "built in Indian fashion, with a circular palisade of trunks of trees twelve feet high. Within, arranged along two lanes, were seventy wigwams, covered with matting and thatch. There were but two passages through the palisade, opposite to each other.

The leaders of the English entered at both doors, followed by sixteen men each. Underhill set fire with a train of powder. Mason snatched a brand from a fire and flung it upon the roof of the nearest wigwam. In three minutes the fort was on fire. In less than an hour the "fort" was destroyed. The attack had turned to a massacre.

It required no skill or bravery to shoot down the terrified savages as they fled in their horror. Once outside of the burning barricade the fugitives were met by their dusky foes, who did not hesitate to slay them as they would have killed wild beasts. These allies of the Puritans fought without asking for help or pay, either in life or money.

So ended the Pequot massacre. Out of seven hundred Red Men, only a bare half-dozen escaped. A hundred men from Connecticut, Plymouth and Massachusetts Bay had silenced the war-whoop of the most warlike Indian tribe in New England for thirty-eight years.

End of the Pequots. Mason's work was not over. He marched to overthrow another Indian fort. He was met on his way by its entire force of three hundred men. These had probably heard of the fate of their comrades at Stonington. The desperate Red Men, who must have known they were fighting for more than life, rallied to drive back the whites. But it was not long before they fell back. They had no courage. They soon scattered, seeking safety in their only way—by flight.

It would be pitiful to follow them. Some sought other tribes. Some miserably perished. Their chief, Sassacus, once so boastful, was killed in a skirmish with the Mohawks. Once so lordly, no one had any mercy or pity for the Pequots now. The story takes us to the opposite extremes. One blow had carried terror to the hearts of the natives and wiped out a whole tribe.

Mason had lost two men by death, and twenty-five had been wounded.

First Indian Church. The first Indian church in New England was organized at South Natick, where a large house after English style was built in 1635. Natick is an Indian term, which denotes "the place of the hills." "The Memoirs of Eliot" says that it lies upon both banks of the Charles River, about eighteen miles southwest from Boston, and ten miles north-west from Dedham.

The town held three long streets, two on the Boston side and one on the other. Most of the houses were built after the Indian style, but a few were patterned after the English way. The meeting house was occupied on Sunday for religious services and during the rest of the week it was used as a school room.

The population numbered about one hundred and fifty, or thirty families. Their chief was Waban, a man past seventy, of excellent character and very pious. The sincerity of these Indians would rank high with their white brothers.

The Apostle Eliot. The Indians were very much misunderstood. It is difficult for an educated man to place himself on a level with the man who lacks education. It is not alone that he is uneducated, but he has the influence and the lessons of an uneducated ancestry. He is not only ignorant himself, but every example that is held up to him is governed by ignorance. He has had nothing to make him more enlightened than his fathers have had. So the poor Red Race often deserve our pity rather than our censure.

A happy exception to the general run of men who came to New England in its early days was the Reverend John Eliot. He possessed an humble spirit. He established a church at Roxbury and he lived, day by day, faithful to his religious teachings. He was one of the few who understood the Indians. He took them into his fold and he lived for them and with them. He mastered their language. He prepared, after much hard work, a Bible which they prized. The Indians loved and revered him. His word was law among them, and wherever he was known no Indian lifted a hand against the white men. If there had been more of the kind of the Apostle Eliot there would have been fewer tears shed, fewer tragedies enacted and fewer lives lost on the old New England frontier.

Quabaug. One of the most important Indian settlements in Central Massachusetts was located at Quabaug Pond, in the east part of Brookfield. Here was the home of one of the foremost chiefs of his day, Nadawahunt, who ruled over a large number of Indians.

Like Passaconaway. Like the noble sachem Passaconaway of the Penacooks, Nadawahunt had become interested in the work of the Apostle. So he invited Eliot to come to him, "to teach his Indians and to live there." Within a few years Eliot followed the Old Bay Path for over sixty miles to Quabaug, and he preached to the

Indians. The aged sachem was now dead, but his son, Wetolshen, was there to welcome him. He, with the Apostle, erected a monument to commemorate the coming of Eliot. This is now the only trace to be seen of the happy event, owing to the changes of the rolling years. Mr. Eliot was given one thousand acres of land in Brimfield. These Indians were very friendly to the Pilgrims.



NADAWAHUNT

Konkawasco. We wish we had time to talk with you more fully of the sachems who ruled over the neutral Indians of this vicinity. Among them all we know not of one more loyal and truthful than Konkawasco. Through King Philip's War he and his men remained true to their promise to the Apostle Eliot.

State Line. It was in 1642 that Woodward and Saffey passed over

the path to establish the line between Massachusetts and Connecticut. It was the same path which had been taken by Hooker and his followers in 1636. It was then the only direct line to Connecticut. It was over this path, a portion of the Old Bay Path, the founders of Hartford followed. What a story might be written, rivaling the thrilling interest of "The Covered Wagon," portraying the fortunes and adventures of those stalwart pioneer families moving with their stock and everything valuable to their new homes hundreds of miles away.

King Philip's War. We now come to one of the most deadly and terrible wars in New England. The Pequot

War of Connecticut had ended nearly forty years before. The English had enjoyed fifty years of peace with Massasoit. Now Massasoit was dead. In his place ruled his oldest son, Philip; "King Philip," he styled himself. Young Philip had watched the numbers of the English increase; he had seen them reaching out for more and more land. He saw this with fear in his heart. He had called his father blind. He had told him the whites would soon own all of the land. Where then would the poor Red Men be?

King Philip believed, and no doubt he was honest, that the Indians should league themselves together and kill the whites before it was too late. His home was near Mount Hope on Narragansett Bay, in Rhode Island. He went forth from this home to rally the scattered tribes of his people. Trained in the solitude of the forest, where the law of battle was swiftness and secrecy, he began his work of organization, while the English did not dream of what he was doing.

It had been the intention of the Indians to make the whites do the first killing. It was their belief that the side which did the first slaying would lose the war. Finally, finding they could not arouse the English to begin the war, or at least give them an excuse for striking back, the Indians killed two white men in Swansea, as they were walking home from church. The news spread like wild fire. Striking a dare-devil blow almost within Boston, the work of horror was carried north and west, even to the Connecticut valley.

Captain Church. At last Captain Benjamin Church, of Plymouth, mustered a company of men and went out to end the war. We have read his account with a shiver of terror. Of course the end could have been foreseen. King Philip's wife and children were taken and carried off as captives. They were taken to Bermuda, where they were sold into slavery and they died in bondage.

King Philip, now broken-hearted, and discouraged, was hunted like a fox. At last he was betrayed by one of his own men and shot down like a dog. His head was cut off and taken to Plymouth, where it was placed upon a pole and set up in the village. The war ended with his death.

The Cost of War. This deadly struggle lasted from 1675 to 1678. It was a critical period in Massachusetts history. Every other town of the ninety which made up its settlements had been a scene of destruction and slaughter. Over a thousand men, women and children had been slain. This was a large number in comparison to their population. This cruel war cost the colonists more than all the value of their personal property. Six hundred homes lay smoldering in ruins. Every family had heard the war-whoop and seen the flaming torch of combat. All of this cost was paid by them without calling upon the royal treasury for a single cent. But it saw an end to the Indian war in Massachusetts, except in small raids or those that were fought out on the northern frontier against the Indians and French. In these raids Massachusetts never shirked her duty nor asked for return money.

Indian Suffering. As great as was the sacrifice and suffering of the English, it did not compare with the loss, famine and disease of the Red Men. The majority of these were the victims of the ignorance and mistakes of their leaders. In their helplessness the sufferers begged in vain for an armistice. They asked—nay, begged—for the privilege of planting a little corn, to save themselves from starvation. Still the strife went on. The women and children succeeded in planting fields of corn in the spring of 1676, hoping, often in vain, it might be spared for them to harvest.

A Tearful Appeal for Peace. Finally, in their desperation, five Sachems united in making what Mr. S. A.

Drake calls the "most appealing supplication from the poor Indians that we have had":

"July 6th, 1676, Mr. John Leveret, my Lord, Mr. Waben, and all the chief men of our Brethren Praying to God: We beseech you to help us: My wife she is but one, but there be more prisoners, which we pray you keep well; Mattamamuck (Mattaump) his wife we entrat you for her. and not only that man, but it is the Request of two Sachems, Sam Sachem of Weshèkum, and (John) the Pakashoag Sachem.

"And that further that you will consider about making peace. We have spoken to the people of Nashoban (viz. Tom Dubler and Peter) that we would agree with you, and make a Covenant of Peace with you. We have been destroyed by your Souldiers, but still we Remember it now to sit still. Do you consider it again. We earnestly entreat you, that you may be so by Jesus Christ. Oh! that it be so! Amen, Amen.

Mattamuck his mark

Sam Sachem "

Simon Pottoquam, Scribe

Uppanippaquam

Pakashokag.

Superscribed.

"To all Englishmen and Indians, all of you hear Mr. Waban, Mr. Eliot."

The Governor and Council did promise to spare the lives of those who had fought unwillingly, but others must die.

When Neutral Indians Suffered. The pathetic part of the unfortunate chapter was when the Indians, who were strictly neutral, were made to suffer. The site of the present town of Webster was occupied on the eastern slope, about fifty-five miles from Boston, by friendly Indians. The Apostle Eliot had been there in 1674 and preached to the Indians. They had listened reverently and believed in what he said. Now let us see what followed.

In the summer of 1676 Major Talcott made what is known as the "Talcott Raid." He captured many Indi-

ans, killed as many, and drove others into Connecticut. He went as far as Northampton and Hadley.

The news of this raid had a serious effect upon the neutral Indians living in that vicinity. Konkawasco looked upon the ghastly work with horror. He belonged to the Tantaskwee tribe. The tribe slain were not of his people, yet they were converts of Eliot's.

As soon as Major Talcott had retreated Konkawasco and others began to pick up their things and move towards the west. It was a pitiful sight. It out-darkened the flight of the Acadians. Only here no blame could be attached to the fugitives. Nearly three-fourths of the company were women and children. Some were old or feeble. The women traveled with all they had on their backs. Some of the younger men carried upon their backs old men or mothers, too helpless to go alone. Pap-poooses were carried in the arms, and altogether the state of the minds of these outcasts can be imagined.

"What is the use to sign a paper, to live under the laws of the white man? It is either death or slavery," exclaimed the noble Konkawasco in despair.

This company, with others, started the first week in August, 1676. To avoid Springfield, where the English were quite strong, Konkawasco crossed the Chicopee River and reached the Connecticut a short distance below the falls. On Friday, the eleventh of August, the Neutral Indians camped within seven miles of Springfield.

Discovered by the white settlers, they were fired upon, while Major Talcott pursued them. He overtook them at Oussotinoag. Here sixty-five of the friendly Indians were killed and fifteen taken captives. This engagement took place the 15th, near the present town of Sheffield.

In the midst of this massacre, the last of a noble line of rulers stepped forward, and raising his hand, implored:

"I am Konkawasco, let my people go in peace."

The Mohicians, who were fighting with the whites, saw and understood. They spoke to Major Talcott and even threatened to leave him if he didn't stop the sacrifice. So the captives were freed and the remnant of the little party was allowed to go in peace. And here, as he resumed his sorrowful flight from home, we get the last glimpse of honest Konkawasco, the last of the great chiefs of Tantaskwee.

Indians Seek Help. So the English had not been long at Massachusetts Bay before an Indian agent came "to talk with Governor Winthrop," and try and induce him to send a couple of men to settle in the valley of the Agawam, or Westfield River. It is recorded that "April 4, 1631, Wahginacut, a sagamore upon the Quonehtcut River, came to Boston, accompanied by John Sagamore and Jack Straw, who were anxious to have some Englishmen come to this country, and give them (the whites) yearly eight skins of beaver, and that the country was fruitful."

Governor Winthrop did not answer this request, but such appeals were not made in vain. Within two years John Oldham and others went "overland by the long path from the Bay to the Long River," which they estimated to be one hundred and sixty miles. The sachems treated them kindly. They brought back specimens of hemp of a superior quality to that the English had grown. This grew in great abundance. They also brought some black lead, which the Indians claimed abounded in rocks there. He was lodged at Indian towns the entire way and was very welcome.

Jack Straw. We must tell you about this friendly Indian. He had served under Sir Walter Raleigh in Virginia. He was one of the two Indians presented to Queen Elizabeth. After the Roanoke colony was given up, Jack Straw and his comrade drifted along the coast towns of New England until reaching Maine. They acted as

guides and interpreters to the English. In 1623 Mr. Thomson, one of the early pioneers of Portsmouth, New Hampshire, employed, in company with Captain Lovett, these Indians as guides and traders. A friend, seeing them, exclaimed:

“How can you trust those Savages? If you want to be correct, call one by the name of Watt Tyler and the other Jack Straw, the greatest Rebels that ever disgraced England.”

Jack Straw's Hill. So our associate of Raleigh bore the name of a scoundrel, but he never knew it. Neither did he ever betray a trust given him by the whites. As an act of confidence in him a hill in Westborough, on the east side of Ruggles Street, was known as Jack Straw Hill. Through the valley to the east flows Jack Straw brook. So much for a name.

Eliot Here. About 1650, Eliot gathered about him the scattered Indians in this vicinity, where he exhorted them in the lodgments of Hopkinton, Marlborough and Grafton. Near these places ran the Bay Path.

First Mine. The mine of graphite was seen by the first party of Englishmen in 1633. The Indians had told them they would find this mine in the midst of a group of hills, where the Bay Path passed between. The place was known to them as Tantaskwee, which meant “between two breast-shaped hills.” This was the home of Konkawasco.

These hills have been removed long since. They were never high, but very noticeable on account of their gravelly appearance. The strata of rock formation which held this deposit of black lead was once horizontal, but it has been tipped up so they stand nearly perpendicular. This must have been near to the grounds of the Worcester South Agricultural grounds. Mr. Chase, in his excellent description of the “Bay Path,” says:

“We must imagine the park-like scenery of hills, val-

leys, and the ponds, here and there, glimmering in the sunlight. The Indian, with his arrow, stone hammer, and his birch canoe, knew more of the secrets of nature than our farmer, lumberman, fisherman, hunter or trapper."

Free from the Pequots. Their long-time enemies, the Pequots, had been vanquished by the English, so they no longer dreaded them. A trained runner, Tammuguit, who was able to run a hundred miles a day with comfort, was a friend to the whites.

New Arrivals. In the year 1644 a deed was secured from the sachem here for a territory ten miles square, which was supposed to cover the black lead country. The Indians retained the rights to hunt, fish and plant. This deed was renewed and signed by other chiefs for ten years and over.

First Printer. Three men came to take possession. One of these was Stephen Day, a noted person, a locksmith by profession. He had set up at Harvard, in 1639, the first English printing press in America. In 1640, he printed the Book of Psalms. He was a man of high aims and energy.

Thomas King was the second man, who was a prospective contractor, who was aiming to perform the first mining in this country.

Richard Smith was probably the most important man in this trio. He had lived for a number of years in the Narragansett country, and was on good terms with these Indians.

CHAPTER VI

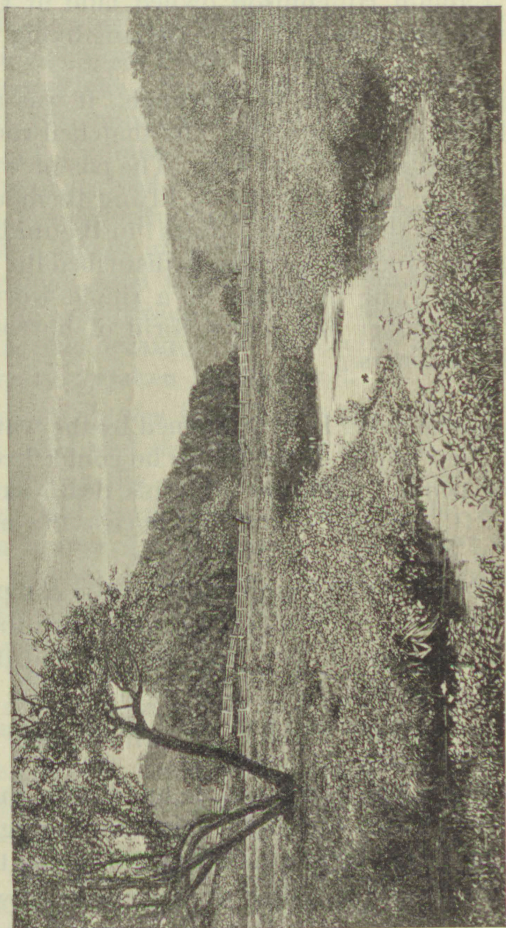
KING PHILIP'S AND OTHER INDIAN WARS

Wheeler's Expedition to Quabaug. This unfortunate expedition took place soon after the breaking out of King Philip's War. On July 28, 1675, Captain Hutchinson and Captain Wheeler were instructed to meet the several Sachems of Quabaug, now Brookfield, and make some treaty of peace with them. These two leaders, with about twenty men, marched from Cambridge to Sudbury on the date given. Finding no Indians here they pushed ahead into the Nipmuck country.

King Philip had been here ahead of them, and the Indians were distrustful. So they retreated. The guide with the whites led them to the border of a swamp, where they were surprised. Taken at a disadvantage, eight of their number was slain.

Finding themselves so furiously assailed, the others took refuge in a house, and here the people living about also came. Two of the men were killed and the others suffered severe attacks from the enemy. Finally, however, those who had escaped with their lives succeeded in reaching Marlborough.

Death of Captain Hutchinson. Captain Hutchinson was wounded at the attack in the swamp, and this wound grew worse, so after he had reached Marlborough he died on the 19th of August. Edward Hutchinson was the son of William and the celebrated Anne Hutchinson, of whom we have already spoken. He was a brother-in-law of Major Thomas Savage of Boston, who married Faith, the sister of Captain Hutchinson. He was the father of Honorable Elisha Hutchinson, one of the Counsellors of Massachusetts. He was the grandfather of



SCENE OF WHEELER'S SURPRISE

Governor Thomas Hutchinson, whose son was the Governor Thomas Hutchinson, the noted historian of Massachusetts. Captain Hutchinson owned land at Quabaug and was well acquainted with the Indians living in those parts.

The Indian Surprise at Marlborough. It was a spring Sabbath, 1676, in Marlborough. The thatched-roof meeting house was filled to overflowing. The pastor was praying devoutly for his parishioners, lifting them up from scenes earthly to those divine. Hark! in the midst of his eloquent appeal, footsteps suddenly disturbed the serenity of the church. The utterance of a single word ended the minister's prayer and sent a thrill of horror to the hearts of his listeners.

"Indians!"

We, who have never been awakened by the war-whoop of the Red Man nor seen the terror he could throw over a crowd of people, while he dealt his death-like blows right and left, cannot imagine the horror the mere cry of that name could give the inhabitants.

With white faces and trembling steps the congregation fled to the one place they believed could afford them protection—the garrison house. And as they fled they saw dusky figures rushing to and fro, swinging the flaming torch of war. Ere the sun had set it shone upon a town smoldering in ruins.

That night the frightened people huddled in the block-house or sought safety in flight, this time fleeing to Boston. The next day Marlborough was a deserted town.

Inside the garrison a body of men waited and watched, as an outpost between the Bay and the scattered towns in the Connecticut valley. So, for three weeks, this warfare was waged. The Indians were careful to keep out of range of the guns in the hands of men who fired to kill.

Failing to draw the men from their protection by artifice after artifice, the Indians then withdrew, but leaving a force behind them to watch over the besieged men. Their object now was Sudbury, which was then the extreme outside town upon the frontier.

Sudbury Fight. Soon after dark on the evening of April 20, two hundred Indians had surrounded the settlement of Sudbury, while the inhabitants were not dreaming of such an event. So quietly was this done that Captain Wadsworth, who had been sent out from Boston with a squad of soldiers, to relieve the garrison at Marlborough, went their way through the town without making any disturbance. So that night the town rested in peace and dreamed of no nearer horror than that which had overtaken Marlborough.

The morning was breaking in the east, when a series of yells, wild and discordant, broke the stillness of the hour. Before the aroused people hovering in Haynes Garrison had been fairly awakened, the flames from burning homes lit the scene. Then began one of the wildest and most desperate encounters known in all of King Philip's War. If outnumbered five to one, the men in the garrison fought like those who have their all at stake. Said one of the historians of that ill-fated day:

"No man or woman seemed to be possessed of fear."

The savage attack continued through the forenoon until one o'clock, when the besiegers, worried by repeated onslaughts from relief parties, abandoned their warfare for a while.

The alarm had been sent abroad, so the settlers in other towns had sent reliefs to the rescue. Twelve volunteers from Concord had come to save their friends from the enemies. These men were surprised by a party of Indians in the river intervale, and soon were overwhelmed by superior numbers and were all killed but one, who managed to escape.

Captain Wadsworth. We have told you how Captain Wadsworth marched through Sudbury at night without discovering the Indian ambuscade haunting the town. Upon reaching Marlborough they learned with surprise of the condition at Sudbury. Though they had marched twenty-five miles that day and were tired, Captain Wadsworth would not listen to a long rest. So, inside of half an hour, they began their return journey.

It was now a little past midnight, and soon after this, starting with a body of horsemen, eighteen in number, under Captain Edward Cowell, when about three miles out of Sudbury were surprised by a party of Indians of about a hundred. Captain Cowell and his men were being hard pressed and most of them must have perished, had not Captain Wadsworth and his soldiers from Marlborough appeared on the scene.

The Indians were soon whipped and began to fall back. So the whites were drawn back into the woods for a mile, when they suddenly found themselves in the midst of an Indian ambush. The savages must have numbered more than five hundred.

Do you blame us if we shrink from describing the scene that followed? Then came an Indian massacre too horrible in its details to be read. Captain Wadsworth, as fine an Indian fighter as Massachusetts ever had, managed to make a retreat to the summit of a hill, where his men formed themselves about him and fought like heroes.

A company from Watertown, who had been attracted here by the alarm, tried to reach the Spartan band, but failed, and finally fell back to the garrison. This left the heroic band alone to fight and die. Even now some of them might have escaped, had not a portion become separated and been driven into the forest.

It was night again now, and the leaders of the besieged party, in order to succor their comrades, fell back and

soon were separated. Above the yells and shots and din of the battle rang, clear and loud, the defiant notes of Captain Brocklebank's bugle horn. Wounded himself unto death, he strove to keep the men together and give them encouragement in this hour of darkness. Brave Brocklebank! brave Wadsworth! the last, wounded mortally, shouted to his men to keep together. He fell almost the last man of the thirty who were killed on the hill at South Sudbury.

Ten men did finally succeed in clearing the Red Men and sought a safety in an old mill, where they defended themselves until rescued the following afternoon by friends who had found them. They were all who escaped of Captain Wadsworth's company. Six others, poor fellows! were captured by the Indians and that night were tortured to death by their fiendish foes.

So closed, with defeat and sorrow to the whites, one of the most memorable campaigns in Philip's War. If the Indians looked upon it as a success they did not show it. It had opened their eyes, just as the battle of Bunker Hill opened the eyes of the British to the fact that the Americans could not be overcome without extraordinary fighting. The Red Men had learned this same truth, too. If they had planned to sweep from the interior to the sea with a victorious wave, they had found that wave suddenly stopped. From that ill-fated day King Philip's spirit was broken. Never afterwards did he meet with any particular success.

Men of '75. New England people love to speak of the Men of '75. They mean, of course, the heroes who fired the "shot heard around the world." Do you realize there were other "Men of '75" and another '75 just as deserving and worthy as "the Men of Lexington"? These were their Great-Great-Grandfathers, who were awakening to the war in 1675, just as their Great-Great-Grandsons were in 1775.

Oh, but the latter were fighting for the freedom of a nation, we hear some of you say. Let us tell you, our young friends, the other side. The men and women of 1675 were fighting to save that nation so it might get its freedom a hundred years later. Upon the result of their defence depended the fate of New England. Had King Philip not been betrayed by false friends, had he been successful, New England might have been lost to the English. Civilization in New England, ay, in America, might have been set back a hundred years. So let us not forget the Minute Men of 1675 as well as to remember those of 1775.

The Waldron Massacre. As an aftermath of this war, in 1687, occurred at Dover, New Hampshire, the Waldron Massacre, as it became known. Up to King Philip's War the Indians in New Hampshire had been friendly. Then, in their efforts to carry the war over New England, two hundred Indians from Massachusetts went up to Dover to incite the Red Men there to take up the cudgel of war. We cannot tell you how they would have succeeded, had not Major Waldron, an influential man, learned of this movement.

Major Waldron advised among his friends that the matter be delayed until the next day. He would, in the meantime, arrange a sham fight, when all weapons would be left out. In this way two hundred Indians were seized, unable to defend themselves, and taken to Boston. Eight of the leaders were hung, while the rest were sold into slavery.

Eventually some of these returned, but it was thirteen years before a plot was formed to avenge the capture. So well was this carried out that Major Waldron, then in his 80th year, and twenty-nine associates, were surprised and killed. Many more were taken to Canada as captives. Such was an Indian's memory. We cannot blame one side more than the other.

The Exploit of Hannah Dustin. We now approach the close of the 17th century. The frontier of Massachusetts at this period can be traced by an imaginary line drawn from Falmouth, now Portland, Maine, to what is now Worcester. Between these extremes were scattered at irregular intervals the settlements of Saco, Wells, York, Maine, and Haverhill, Andover, Dunstable and Groton. These places were the scenes of the warfare waged by the Christian Indians and the untamed Abenakis of the East.

The tribes of Indians who had attacked York, Salmon Falls, Wells and Saco a few years before no doubt were the same who now were told to devastate Haverhill and vicinity. We must understand that this is little more than conjecture. The wild and roving disposition of the Red Men made it impossible to follow any one party any length of time. They were to be found wherever there were good hunting grounds, be it in the Merrimack valley, the Pascataqua or the St. Lawrence.

The story of Hannah Dustin, as it runs from Cotton Mather's account, is that the Indians surprised the family in their home. Mr. Dustin fled with their large family of children, expecting to return to her aid, but failing to do this she, with her baby, her nurse and a young man named Leonardson, were taken captives by the Indians. Her child was killed and the three, with others, were carried off as captives. There is doubt about the course they took, but it is apparent that they finally stopped at a place in Concord, New Hampshire, which has been named as "Dustin Island." Here, on the night of March 30, 1697, she is said to have awakened her companions, put the sleeping Indians to death, scalped them and then floated down the Merrimack to her home in Haverhill. It does not seem possible this part of the narrative could be true, taking into consideration the time of the year. Be that as it may, she got home safely.

Of one thing we are pretty certain. The ancient records of the Massachusetts General Court, under date of June 16, 1697, contains the following:

"Voted in concurrence with the representatives that there be allowed and ordered out of the Publick treasury unto Thomas Dustan of Haverhill, on behalf of Hannah his wife the sum of twenty-five pounds. To Mary Neff the sum of twelve pounds and ten shillings and to Samuel Leonardson the sum of twelve pounds ten shillings."

So the record ends. We know nothing more of Hannah Dustin. Samuel Leonardson was buried in a Connecticut town, while Mary Neff has descendants living in Connecticut. Hannah Dustin has many who claim her as an ancestor, and she has memorials in Haverhill and on the island where she performed her daring deed. "Not as a type of the fabled Amazon should we think of this woman, but rather as a stern, unyielding matron of that epoch whose prime conditions were virtue, character and self-denial."

The Snow-Shoe Scouts. Early in the 18th century the Indians were active on the northern frontier, occasionally sweeping down in Massachusetts. To stop these raids, the men in the vicinity of Old Dunstable, which was then a frontier town, planned to send out what became known in history as "The Snow-Shoe Scouts."

The situation of the entire colonists in America was very critical at this period. The English held only a fringe of settlements along the New England coast, with a few scattered hamlets in the interior. The Dutch had a few villages in New Netherlands, now New York, and the English a weak colony at Jamestown, Virginia.

The entire interior, from Acadie on the east, up the valley of the St. Lawrence past Tadousac, the trading station at the mouth of the Saguenay; Quebec, upon its rock-throne; Montreal, on the site of the Huron capital; the rich country about the Great Lakes, down to the fer-

tile basins running to the Gulf of Mexico was claimed by the French. This crescent-shaped line of settlements was maintained by a chain of fortresses, guarded by a paid soldiery, and supported by rich traders who desired to become yet richer.

The difference between the French and the English was this: In all of the French territory were only two homes. The English were home-builders, and wherever they went you were certain to find homes. These they were ready to defend with their lives.

Another difference was the willingness, ay, eagerness, of the French to ally themselves with the Indians to get their help to carry on their struggle with the British. Their missionaries coaxed them and their soldiers laid down beside them in the wallow to get their friendship. The English did neither. But, while the French did secure their services, they did not imitate their methods of warfare. The English did. So they gained a decided advantage over the French from the days of Captain Tyng and his Snow-Shoe Scouts to the close of the cruel drama under Robert Rogers and his Wood Rangers.

We wish you could witness the cunning artifices and hand-to-hand encounters of the veterans of those war-trails and compare them with the personal prowess and valor of the mailed warriors of the age of chivalry in European combats. It is true the dazzling splendor of burnished armor and the eclat of heraldry is wanting, but in their place we see the sun-bronzed, weather-beaten men; instead of the thunder of hoofs is the stillness of foot soldiers moving silently through the trackless wilderness; instead of the clangor of arms ring the sharp twang of the bow and the flight of the feathered arrow.

Tyng's Petition. Captain William Tyng petitioned the Massachusetts General Court for the privilege of organizing a band of scouts to search over the wide belt of country to the north for the dusky enemies. This peti-

tion was granted, and within a week forty-four men had enlisted in his party. Nineteen of these were from Chelmsford, seventeen from Groton, five from Dunstable and three from Billerica.

Captain William Tyng. The organizer and leader of this band of Snow-Shoe Scouts was the second son of Colonel John and Sarah (Usher) Tyng. His grandfather, the Hon. Edward Tyng, was born in Dunstable, England, in 1600. William, born on April 22, 1679, was the first white child born in Dunstable. His father, Edward, one of the original proprietors of Dunstable, was the only one, who with his family, remained in Dunstable during the period of King Philip's War.

William Tyng was a prominent man in town. He was representative to the General Court in 1707, and was made Major over the armed forces in his vicinity in 1709. The following summer, while engaged in active service, he was wounded by a party of Indians and died a few days later.

The Indians had renewed hostilities in the summer of 1703, after a declaration of war between France and Great Britain, and during that season a series of attacks was made against the frontier settlements. Over two hundred men, women and children were killed or carried off as captives to Canada. Dunstable was the first town to act in self-defense and William Tyng was chosen as the most suitable man to lead the hazardous expedition.

Joe English. The guide for these scouts was a friendly Indian known as Joe English. He was a grandson of Massaconnet, chief sagamore of the Agawam tribe of Indians. His real name was Merruwacomet, meaning "the first to reach the meeting place." This conveyed the idea that he was not only fleet of foot but faithful. He inherited land from his grand-parent, which he conveyed to the English and his wife. Many stories are told of his bravery and fidelity. He was often a guide to the Eng-

lish. He was killed soon after this expedition by some of his own race. This was done in Dunstable. His widow was rewarded by the Massachusetts Assembly by a pension to her and her two children, "because he had died in the service of his country."

Captain Tyng was a God-fearing man, and every Sabbath was strictly observed by him. The manner in which this was kept is in the account of John Richardson, who was fined forty shillings for "wetting a piece of an old hat to put into his shoe," which had chafed his foot while on the march.

Old Harry. This expedition resulted in killing six Indians, the leader of which was known as "Old Harry." He had been a merciless foe but he died like a warrior. Massachusetts was then paying a bounty for scalps, so Captain Tyng and his men received two hundred pounds as their reward. It is said Joe English would take no part in the scalping nor any portion of the reward.

This expedition started December 28, 1703, and ended January 25, 1704, three days less than one month. It was followed by over twenty scouting parties of this kind. The war lasted a little over ten years, or until 1713, when a decade of peace passed.

Let it not be forgotten that whatever we have accomplished, whatever has been done in building up a civilization, in fostering industry, in supporting education, the foundation was laid by the men and women who dared and conquered the Genius of the Wilderness; the men and women who followed the Indian trails into the primeval forest, where now our streets and highways band the country, dotted with farm-houses or lined with city homes.

Indian Attack at Deerfield. The story of the Indian wars is written in blood. It is too horrible in its details to relate. One of the most tragical of these occurred at Deerfield, resting in the peaceful valley of the Connecti-

cut River. The Indians had now fallen under the influence of the French, who were at war with the English. This makes it all seem more cruel.

Unobserved by all, a Frenchman, Rouville, had led two hundred and fifty Indians and Frenchmen to wreak vengeance upon the English settlement.

The time was a winter's night, or rather morning, on the 29th of February, 1704. The snow lay deep upon the ground, while the inhabitants slept in fancied security. There had been sentries, but these had left their posts to seek a brief repose before the breaking of another day.

The war-party had patiently waited until the signal had been given. Then they rushed over the snow drifts piled against the palisades. They hurled themselves upon the aroused whites. Oh, the horror that followed!

We read Indian stories and grow excited and interested over scenes that thrill us. Here was the heroism and sacrifice of a Dime Novel in real life. Before the struggle was over sixty men, women and children had been killed. Over a hundred had been taken prisoners. Almost every house in the village had been plundered and destroyed.

John Williams a Captive. Among those who had been captured was the Reverend John Williams, the village minister. He had been awakened from a sound sleep by the din and confusion of the attack. Springing from his bed, he attempted to resist his enemies. But his old-time pistol missed fire. He was finally taken prisoner, with his family. He was among those who were started for Canada. But his wife and nineteen of his fellow-captives were murdered on the way to Montreal.

The French Governor, who had consented to allow all of this lawlessness and crime, treated Mr. Williams kindly. But two years dragged their weary days away before he was finally exchanged, with nearly sixty of his

friends, for other prisoners held by the English. The entire party then sailed for Boston.

The great sorrow of Mr. Williams' life, in addition to the loss of his wife, was the fact that his daughter had married an Indian husband and refused to return with him. Some of her children did return in more recent years, but not to remain.

Owing to the fact that Rouville's men did not have snow-shoes, this prevented them from following on to the lower villages, so these escaped.

Indian Overthrow at Norridgewock. We now come to one of the closing scenes in Indian Warfare. In this Massachusetts did her part, but in conjunction with Maine and New Hampshire. A zealous priest by the name of Father Rasle had built up a missionary settlement on the Kennebec River at a place called to this day "Norridgewock." Here he became a powerful factor in the French power. No doubt the Indians were contented, but they were harassing the English border.

To check these depredations, if not to stop them, in the summer of 1724, Maine fitted out a company of men under Harmon and Moulton, and this company of volunteers surprised the mission settlement and most of the Red Men were killed, including Father Rasle. Many of the spoils of this campaign were taken to Boston, where they still remain.

Lovewell's Expedition. The following spring Captain John Lovewell, of Old Dunstable, at the head of forty men marched from his home town, to effect the overthrow of an Indian force located on the intervalles of the Saco River, in what is now the town of Fryeburg, Maine. These Indians were the last of the Sokoki tribe, and the most warlike Indians in Northern New England.

Lovewell had had considerable experience in Indian warfare. This was his third scouting party, and in the former he had been very successful. He started in the

spring of 1725, but some of his men were taken sick and had to return, while a few others were unable to complete the journey. So he reached the scene of the battle on the shore of Lake Uncannebe, since rechristened "Lovewell's Pond," when he unexpectedly encountered the Sokoki. The Indians were surprised, though they numbered nearly eighty men. One of the hottest battles on the New England frontier was waged from nearly sun to sun on that May day, 1725. Captain Lovewell was killed in the thickest of the fight, and Paugus, the hot-headed Indian fighter, was shot by Lieutenant Seth Wyman, of Woburn, Massachusetts, before the day was over. This twain, meeting on the shore of the pond, with both guns empty, began to load their weapons for the deadly fray, which meant death to one or both. Wyman outwitted his enemy by dropping the butt of his weapon upon the ground and thus priming it so he fired ahead of his rival. Lieutenant Wyman died the following summer from the effects of that campaign. At sunset, their fiery leader dead, the shattered remnant of their eighty-odd men retreated, soon after seeking the missionary settlement of St. Francis, in Canada.

The fall of Father Rasle at Norridgewock, which place is now marked by a monument, and the defeat of the Indians at this rendezvous ended their disposition for war. For twenty-five years the Indians sought trade with the English. So Father Rasle and Lovewell did not make their sacrifice in vain. The next Indian War was fought out on the shore of Lakes George and Champlain in what is known as the Seven Years' War.

A Pioneer Heroine. Among the brave women of frontier days we wish to include Mrs. Solomon Denning. She came with her family from Wethersfield, Connecticut, to Pontoosuck. This was an Indian name meaning "run for the deer." The English gave this place the name of Pittsfield, in 1752.

For over two years Mrs. Denning was the only woman in the town. Often she was left alone in the cabin for days at a time. Her husband would be gone back home to get something needed or perform some errand. As this couple were then the only white inhabitants for miles about, she would feel very lonesome. Around her was the solitude of the wilderness haunted by wild beasts and warlike savages. When the sun sets and darkness silently steals over the scene, one can almost feel the silence. Even if you know there is no enemy prowling about, you cannot throw off the oppression the night and stillness gives you.

Upon one time, when her husband had been absent nearly a week, and she had not seen a human being, Mrs. Denning became so nervous and anxious she could not sleep. It was in vain she repeated to herself that the wild animals could not get to her, for the door was carefully bolted. She tried in vain to make herself believe no Indian was outside.

She lay and endured this agony a while, and then she arose at the hour of midnight. Flinging open her door, she listened to the animal choir breaking the night silence with their bravado. The hooting of an owl, the barking of a raccoon, the mournful notes of a whip-poor-will and the howl of a hungry wolf mingled in distracted melody. In a loneliness she could not combat and remain silent, she shouted into the darkness at the top of her voice. This daring call of defiance she repeated, time and again, her voice each time echoed back from the distant hills with startling clearness.

Listening then a moment every other sound was stilled. She had hushed the outbreak of the owl, the coon, the whip-poor-will and the wolf. The stillness that followed was now broken by a breath of the south wind sighing through the tree-tops. It was so restful, and her fear conquered, she laid down to sleep until morning. She awoke to find Mr. Denning at home.

This utter feeling of loneliness was shared by many another poor woman left alone in the same plight.

Mrs. Norton's Defence. The town of Orford, Worcester County, was first settled by French Protestants about 1688. These people built a meeting house and fort on Mayo's or Fort Hill, as it is now called. An Indian raid in 1696 drove these pioneers away. It was twenty-five years before another settlement was begun. The Indians were still here.

It is told that as late as 1774, August 6, four red men were prowling about the country. They ran upon what looked like a deserted house. This belonged to Samuel Norton. It was a small house which had been built under the side of a hill. By climbing the hill the Indians got upon the roof. Mr. Norton was away and only Mrs. Norton at home. She had made no noise so they decided the house was deserted.

With their hatchets they soon had cut a hole through the roof. Then one of them dropped down through. But no sooner was his body hanging down through the ragged hole than the report of a musket broke the stillness of the night. The redskin gave expression to a howl of pain as loud as the report of the gun, and his companions drew him up upon the roof.

"Him house no empty!" cried one of the Indians, as the three dragged away their companion. Satisfied now it would not be safe to try to enter the house again, the four skulked away. Until daylight came, bringing Mr. Norton, a lone woman stood at bay, watching and waiting for the red enemy. She was armed with two muskets and two pistols, the four carefully charged with powder and bullets.

A Heroine of Dorchester. Among these stories of Indian attacks and warlike horror, we find the scenes enlivened, here and there, with tales that brighten the pages. we will tell you a few of these incidents.

Among the early settlers of Dorchester was George Minot. He was a ruling elder for thirty years, and died December 24, 1671. His house stood in what is now the village of Neponset.

A hunting party of the Narragansett Indians called here at one time to get something to eat. The men were all away and the Red Men evidently knew this. So Mrs. Minot, who met them, was offended by the way in which they asked for food. She very politely but firmly told them she had nothing to spare them. The disappointed Indians went away, saying they would come back and kill the whole family.

Not dreaming of the watch which had been placed over their home by the Indians, it was not long before all of the family, except a young daughter and two small children were left. The Indians decided this would be a good time to strike for vengeance. So they crept quietly towards the house.

The young woman in the home saw one of them, and she was alarmed. But she proved quick-witted and brave. Seeing two brass kettles, she said to the children, without telling them what she had in mind:

"Quick, Mary and John, creep under these and let me see if they will hold you. Don't make any noise until I tell you to come out."

Then, seizing a loaded musket near at hand, she anxiously watched for the first movement on the part of the Indians. She didn't have to wait long before a volley of arrows rattled against the wall of the house. Peering out upon them she took good aim and fired her first shot. The howl of pain which followed told her she had not missed her mark.

Before she could reload her weapon an Indian's head appeared at one of the windows. She seized a shovel from the side of the fire-place. Filling this with live coals, she threw them into his face and bosom. He ut-

tered a wild howl of anguish and retreated. His blanket was on fire.

The Indians were so surprised and frightened they gave up the attack. The brave girl was rewarded by the Massachusetts Bay government with a silver wrist-band, on which was engraved the legend:

"She slew the Narragansett hunter."

CHAPTER VII

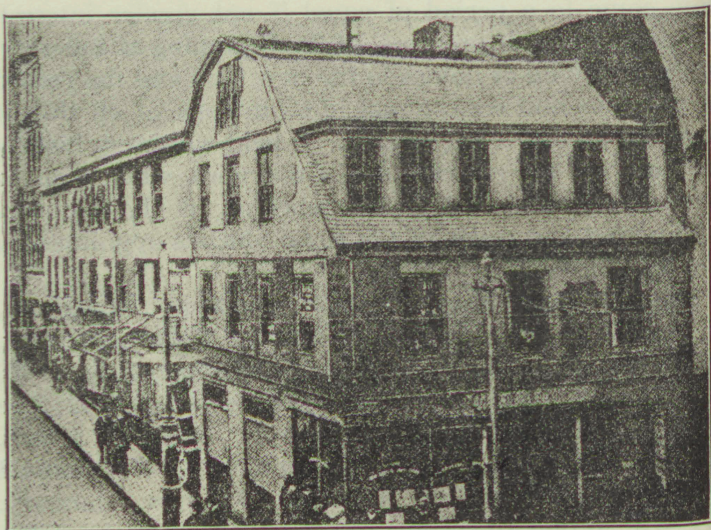
THE ROYAL GOVERNORS

The Royal Governors. The Indian wars nearly over, and the golden age of the Charter Governors told, we now come to a period of equal if not greater interest. It was a period of progress, of the beginning of industry, of the founding of homes in the new land and the record of religious and educational life. In spite of all this, it was also an era of oppression. It held within its history the story of the eleven Royal Governors, while it gives the causes which led to the rebellion of the colonists. The names and order of the royal officials appointed by the King are—

Sir William Phipps, 1692; William Stoughton, Acting Governor, May, 1694; Earl of Bellomont, May, 1697; William Stoughton, Acting Governor, July, 1700; The Council, July, 1701; Joseph Dudley, June, 1702; The Council, February, 1714; Joseph Dudley, March, 1714-15; William Tailer, November, 1715; Samuel Shute, October, 1716; William Dummer, January, 1722-23, Acting Governor; William Burnet, July, 1728; William Dummer, Acting Governor, September, 1728; William Tailer, Acting Governor, June, 1730; Jonathan Belcher, August, 1730; William Shirley, August, 1741; Spencer Phipps, Acting Governor, September, 1756; The Council, April, 1757; Thomas Pownall, August, 1757; Thomas Hutchinson, Acting Governor, June, 1760; Francis Bernard, August, 1760; Thomas Hutchinson, Acting Governor, August, 1769; Thomas Hutchinson, March, 1771; Thomas Gage, May, 1774, to his abdication of Boston at the end of the siege, October, 1774.

The period of this royal array of Governors ran from 1692 to the beginning of the Revolution, 1775, or over eighty years.

The Province House. These pompous gentlemen lived in the Province House, as it was known. This stately mansion, with its broad lawns and grand trees, stood about opposite of the old South Church. The house was



PROVINCE HOUSE

built of brick by Peter Sargeant, a wealthy London merchant, who came here to live in 1667. It was three stories high, and had a gambrel roof, with a lofty cupola. It was a conspicuous building and the scene of many illustrious parties in the days of the Royal Governors. It was rented by its occupants in 1692, until 1716, when the province bought it for three thousand pounds. The royal arms were carved over the portico. Let me quote for your benefit from Hezekiah Butterworth, in his fine "History of Boston," for young people:

"Up the great staircase in military boots the new governor strode and looked out from the high cupola over a most picturesque part of the pleasant province. In the great court below the military were from time to time reviewed."

Hawthorne's "Stories of the Old Province House," giving views of the beautiful ladies, provincial warriors, and proud royalists who once attended its festivals, are the best examples of fiction ever written in New England. After the royal governors had given up their governments the Province House was used for a few years as a meeting place for the officials of the colony.

These same royal governors attended divine worship at King's Chapel. A state pew with fine drapery and canopy embellished the place. The first King's Chapel was a wooden building raised in 1689. The corner stone of the present chapel was laid by Governor Shirley, August 11, 1749.

The Old South Church. This "church of the people," as it became known in its earlier days, was noted meeting place for those who rebelled against the king. This church was erected in 1749.

Faneuil Hall. A close rival of the Old South was Faneuil Hall, given to the town by Peter Faneuil, a nephew of Andrew Faneuil, a French Protestant or Huguenot, who had fled from France. He arrived in Boston in 1691. A church of French Protestants was gathered here. Father Daille was its pastor, and Faneuil and Bowdoin were among its leading members. The lower story, when given to the city, became known as Faneuil Hall. On the second floor town meetings were held, and at the first one an eulogy was pronounced upon the giver by John Lovell, Master of the Latin School. Peter Faneuil had died a short time after making this gift, 1742. This was really the first of many eloquent tributes paid to public men, as the years rolled by. Lovell's closing words,

printed on the town records, appears this prophetic message:

“What now remains, but my ardent wishes that this hall may be ever sacred to the interests of truth, of justice, of loyalty, of honor, of liberty.

“May Liberty always spread its joyful wings over this place! Liberty, that opens men’s hearts to beneficence, and gives the relish to those who enjoy the effects of it.

“And may Loyalty to the King, under whom we enjoy his liberty, ever remain our character.”

So Faneuil Hall became the town meeting place, where many an argument was argued out in earnest language.



FANEUIL HALL

It was partly destroyed by fire in 1761, but rebuilt two years later. In this hall many wordy struggles were fought out in settling the arguments arising from the controversies leading to the American Revolution.

A new hall was added in 1805, and here the walls have echoed to the stirring eloquence of Webster, Choate, Sumner and Phillips.

Reverend George Whitefield. This eloquent English Evangelist came to Boston in 1740. Governor Belcher’s son welcomed him. Of a commanding presence, a soft,

musical voice, but which carried a volume of sound, this matchless divine had no rival in New England. No church would hold the vast throngs of people who came to listen to him. So most of his addresses were given on Boston Common. Let us quote you from Butterworth:

"It was early autumn. The Common was beautiful with its bright tinted trees. Ten thousand people used to gather in their shade to hear the matchless eloquence of the English evangelist. He preached his farewell sermon to twenty thousand people."

At this time Great Britain and France were preparing for war. This came in 1774 and was known in Europe as "King George's War." As usual, this struggle was quickly carried to New England and New France. Here it was known as "Governor Shirley's War," for this gentleman was then Governor of Massachusetts, New Hampshire and Maine.

Louisburg. Louisburg, a stronghold on Cape Breton and guarding the approach to the Province of Quebec, was regarded as the Gibraltar of America. Its fortifications had cost the French five million dollars. William Vaughan, who had been there, urged its conquest. He believed it could be done. He went to Governor Shirley, who gave his approval and urged its organization.

Massachusetts did her part nobly, so the expedition, which proved to have been well executed, went bravely on. The command was intrusted to Colonel William Pepperell, of Kittery, Maine. Not a single Briton was present at this end of the work. English naval forces did contribute towards its success in the end. The expedition was highly successful, and the English gained the glory of it, while poor William Vaughan, the real hero, died in obscurity. Colonel William Pepperell was made a baronet, the only colonial American who ever received that honor, says John Fiske. In the settlement at the

end of the war, Great Britain traded the fortifications with the French as if it were a bauble. So before the close of the French and Indian War New England and Great Britain had to win it back again. She has always kept it ever since.

The fleet, which sailed from Boston, came in sight of Louisburg April 30, 1745. The fortress surrendered June 17, 1745, just thirty years before the Battle of Bunker Hill. Joy filled the colony.

The Prayer of Thomas Prince. The news of the fall of Louisburg brought joy to many hearts in New England. But the joy was short-lived. As if in payment for what New England had done, word came that the French Admiral d'Anville was outfitting an expedition to sack the city of Boston. Fearing such an attack which would destroy the town, seven thousand men were mustered and placed under arms on Boston Common. Now let us quote from Butterworth:

"It was September—the Sabbath. In his lofty pulpit in the Old South Church Reverend Thomas Prince rose to pray for the deliverance from the impending danger. While he was praying 'a sudden gust of wind arose the day having until now been clear and calm, so violent as to cause a loud clattering of the windows. The pastor paused in his prayer, and, looking upon his congregation with a countenance full of hope, he again commenced, and with great devotional ardor supplicated the Almighty to cause that wind to frustrate the object of "our enemies." A tempest ensued, in which the greater part of the French fleet was wrecked on the coast of Nova Scotia. The Duke d'Anville committed suicide.'"

Products of the Soil. The soil is fertile. The earth will give us a living. This may be true, with certain restrictions. But we have to work for all we get. I have thought many times of what the laborers said to me, while we were hoeing and cultivating the blades of corn:

"The hard-hack grows spontaneous; the weed requires no cultivation; the burdock, no fertilizer. But the corn we have to plant with care, tend with diligence, pull out

the grass and weeds, put fresh earth around the fragile stalks of growing corn. Why should it be so?"

We cannot see why this should be so. If the primitive world could furnish this for us all ready to be eaten, simply for the plucking, what would we be worth to the world—to ourselves?

What would Carver and his Pilgrims have done had they found the fish of Plymouth waters ready to be eaten, and the corn in the bread? What would Winthrop and his Puritans have done had they been able to pick their living, ready for the most critical appetite, from the rocks of Salem and the hills of Boston? This history would not have been written, for there would have been no foundation for a history. The virgin soil produces nothing until it is wooed by labor and conquered by intelligence.

Few men will own that they want to escape work, but they want to make life easier. This is the dream of every man. To answer this call they listen to the alluring word of "gold, gold, gold." It was for this Columbus led the way to America. It was for gold Cortes and Pizarro and a host of other Spaniards plunged into the New World. It was this call which beckoned thousands to the Pacific slope in '49. It was this hope which urged people to Australia, to Africa, to Alaska, to the extreme corners of the world.

Resources of the Puritans. The men who came to Massachusetts were not bribed or deceived to this extent. They expected a wilderness to fight, with much hard work to meet. The explorers found plenty of fish along the New England coast. But to get the fish required boats and vessels. These had to be built. John Winthrop knew this. Within a year of his landing, he launched on the Mystic River, now belonging to Medford, a ship of sixty tons. He named this the "Blessing of the Bay." This vessel was the first built in New England.

This proved that the forests of Massachusetts afforded every kind of wood needed in ship building. It was not long before the spars of the Massachusetts pine forests had been sent to every ship-building nation in Europe. This was the beginning of the world-wide reputation acquired here.

Disappointment of the Pilgrims. The Pilgrims may have been disappointed. Very little grew naturally to help support them. But there was the sea. That never failed them. Says Brooks, in his admirable *Story of Massachusetts*:

"At this moment (1890) less than a thousand New Englanders draw from the sea one-half as much food as the whole fertile West sends to her in the shape of bread-stuffs."

Clams, the earliest food of the Pilgrims, mackerel, cod, salmon, trout, and fish of many other kinds have fed the people of the country.

Home Industry. The Puritan learned early that industry is a resource not to be trifled with. Who would prosper must improve his opportunities. So the New Englander planned to have work at home. This was more necessary as the home government, Great Britain, was determined to keep from her colonies all knowledge of manufacture that was possible.

The Home of Manufactures. Despite this fact of the zealous opposition of England, Massachusetts is pre-eminently the home of manufacturing industries. As early as 1640, only ten years after the landing of the first Puritan, official action was taken to encourage cotton, woolen and linen manufactures. Towns were directed to ascertain what seed was needed for the growing of flax. The inhabitants were asked to show their skill in breaking flax or operating the spinning wheels, and to be proficient in weaving.

Spinning was to be taught to the boys and girls. A bounty was offered for wool and linen cloth made from home-grown materials.

Mill Manufacture. The real establishment of the textile industry began in Rowley in 1643. That year a fulling mill was brought over from Yorkshire, England, by men trained in its use. This was put into operation at once. Cloth manufacture was begun on improved machinery. And this early period of industry marks the progress made by Massachusetts in the years to follow. It has made her a leader in this respect.

Other Manufactures. Within thirty years of the settlement at Plymouth the industries of the people were manifest in many ways. To the credit of the Puritans and the Yorkshire colonists, we find busy sawmills, grist-mills, iron foundries, rope-walks, gunshops, tanneries, brick yards, textile mills, and ship-yards. Among the exports were corn, pork, fish, furs, and lumber.

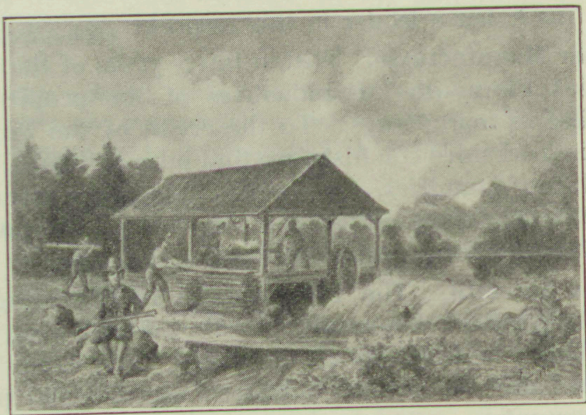
First Sawmill. The first sawmill in New England, and probably in America, was erected at Dover, New Hampshire, in 1631, which employed thirty men. This was probably the earliest industrial use of water power in this country.

Grants for sawmills were made soon after this date in Massachusetts and special obligation was laid upon the mill owner. Gloucester in 1650 made it the rule for the operator to sell boards one shilling per hundred "better cheap than to strangers." Each sawmill grant said "no timber should be cut within three miles of the meeting house."

Ship-Building. From building saw mills to ships was a short step. There was an abundance of second-class lumber "fit for shipping, planks or knees." These were teamed to the ship-yards, where ship-building soon became an important business. As New England built ships costing twenty-five dollars a ton below European

prices, the Boston market began to be a principal export. Governor Hutchinson's figures, in 1676, at the time of King Philip's War, is the proof of the growth of the industry. He said there were around Boston, at this time, thirty vessels between one hundred and two hundred tons; two hundred between fifty and one hundred tons, and five hundred smaller vessels.

Boston's Port. Within a hundred years Boston became one of the world's busiest ports. Nearly a thousand ves-



FIRST SAWMILL

sels engaged in foreign trade annually arrived and departed, while a big number plied along the coast. At the breaking out of the Revolution Massachusetts constructed one-half of all the vessels built in America. You will want to remember this.

This mastery of ship-building was of long standing. It did not end until the decline of clipper ships in 1860. Nor did her prosperity stop with the close of the "golden age" of shipping. In new lines—in the manufacture of coal and oil-burning steamers and motor ships, her excellent harbor and modern equipments, enabled her to

do a bigger and more profitable business than in the days of clipper ships.

Bootmakers' Union. In 1646, only sixteen years after the coming of the Puritans, complaint having been made of irregularity in boot-making, which injured the trade, the boot-makers of Boston petitioned to the General Court for permission to join in one body for the purpose of making "all boots might be alike made well." From that day the boot and shoe industry has flourished in Massachusetts. This was the beginning of Labor Unions.

Fish and Lumber. Fish and lumber laid the foundation of the commerce and prosperity of Massachusetts. Only fifteen years after the arrival of the Puritans she shipped to the West Indies and the Catholic countries of Europe three hundred thousand dried fish. In 1641 eleven vessels went to the West Indies carrying cargoes of lumber and pipe staves, returning loaded with sugar, indigo, and fruit. This trade grew steadily, year by year, while the number of vessels increased.

First Iron Foundry. The first iron foundry in America was founded at Lynn, in 1643. This enterprise was due to the zealous encouragement of John Winthrop, Jr., and the skill and perseverance of Joseph Jenks. It is claimed that the first successful casting was a quart iron pot. This foundry seems to have been in successful operation in 1645. The furnace then "runs eight tons per week and their bar iron is as good as that obtained from Spain." Saugus bog furnished the iron ore.

Improved Scythes. In 1646, this same Joseph Jenkins, who was a man of brains as well as skill and perseverance, petitioned the Court for a patent to run for fourteen years "to build a mill for the making of scythes." Before this move the scythes had been wide and heavy, though short. Jenkins made them much lighter and narrower, which type crowded out all others for use in this country.

Education. In the matter of acquiring an education New England led the world. Massachusetts led the rest of New England. Early in their endeavor to wrest a livelihood from land and sea the Puritan discovered that an education was valuable to all. Until then their day schools, such as they were, had been a personal or private institution. By a daring movement they threw the burden upon the public treasury. They had done the same in religious affairs. What was for the public good should be paid for by the public. No grant of land or title for a community was made without a special provision for schooling.

In the New England climate, about one-half of the year only was adapted for work upon the land. If the cold months were not improved, it became evident to the frugal Puritan that one-half of the battle was lost. So, the winter months, when their labor was in less demand, was selected for school. Thirteen or fourteen weeks were therefore given to "the winter term." Then boys and girls of all ages might attend as far as possible.

It was not unusual to find from sixty to seventy pupils taught by one teacher. Neither was it uncommon to see young men and young women attending these schools. Men were generally employed as teachers. A shorter term was arranged, of perhaps ten weeks, for the summer school. These schools were taught by the women. The larger pupils were now absent, working with their parents.

The Heroic Dead of San Lazaro. One of the most infamous military mistakes we ever knew occurred in 1740 and 1741. Few historians speak of it, yet we cannot pass it by. In October, 1740, less than a year following the declaration of war with Spain, the campaign began. At this time Spain controlled the ports between the southern boundary of Georgia across the continent to northern boundary of California, and so south on both

coasts to Cape Horn, with the exception of the Portuguese in Brazil. Great Britain's object was to open some of the Spanish ports to British ships.

In her greed England called upon the States to send troops to help her out in the campaign. So thirty-six companies of one hundred men each responded from nine of the colonies. In this appeal Massachusetts responded to the extent of five companies, five hundred men.

The troops from the Old Bay State were commanded by Captains Daniel Goffe, John Prescott, Thomas Phillips, George Stewart and John Winslow. These soldiers were raised and officered in July, 1740, and 17,500 pounds were appropriated by this colony. Through the mismanagement and incompetence of its two leading officers, this expedition proved an utter failure. Out of one thousand men furnished by New England, one-half of whom went from Massachusetts, barely one hundred lived to return. The torrid climate, the useless fighting and incompetent command answered for the loss.

Infamous Origin of an Honored Name. The two men who were jointly responsible for this defeat and loss of 25,000 men in all were General Thomas Wentworth and Admiral Edward Vernon. It so happened that Lawrence Washington served under the last-named, and he gave his surname of Vernon to his own estate in Virginia. Out of this finally came Mount Vernon, the far-known home of General George Washington.

Phipps' Expedition to Quebec. Phipps' expedition to break down the French Gibraltar, if uneffectual, was manned largely and commanded by Massachusetts. Again, in the Wolfe campaign of 1759 Massachusetts did her part in furnishing nearly one-half of the soldiers, who fought side by side with the English. This was the last time Massachusetts fought as an ally with the British power.

Influence of Pioneers. We all know there is a difference in the capacity and morals of different people. What makes this difference? The climate has much to do with it. Yet behind this each race has its inheritance, its associations, the influences which marks its progress. What is the difference between the Massachusetts Puritan and the Virginia Cavalier? The forces which shaped this difference began a long time ago—hundreds of years. If we want to know the character and success of the people of a town we go back to its original proprietors.

Northampton. This thriving town in Western Massachusetts was first settled in 1654. It was then far out on the frontier. It was indeed in the "heart of the Wilderness." But thither found their way such men as believed in the Word of God. We find there the families of the Allens, Bridgmans, Dwights, Elliotts, Howards, Kings, Strongs, Stoddards and Wrights, with many more equally as strong. It was a very religious community. In 1735, when Jonathan Edwards was its pastor, more than half of the inhabitants in the town belonged to his church. Let us quote you from the writings of Reverend Josiah Strong.

"Among the natives and residents of the town are about 354 college graduates, besides fifty-six graduates of other institutions."

We find that over five hundred of its inhabitants have graduated from college and a thousand have walked in the higher walks of life and have held official responsible positions of life. All of these callings have demanded not only a good education but the higher qualities of religious living. And this is only a marked example of what Massachusetts settlers did. They worked together to make religion, education, liberty and law the four corner stones of their civilization.

Years of Bright Industry. Every cloud has its silver lining, it is said. So for three-fourths of a century, with

her royal governors, with her trials and differences in regard to her boundary lines, her desserts at the English courts, those were not unhappy years. Massachusetts grew in population, in wealth, in prosperity, while her patriotic leaders held in their hearts a growing hope of the day when she should be free.

CHAPTER VIII

LEXINGTON AND BUNKER HILL

Independence. All through these years of royal rule and colonial independence two feelings always rankled in the breasts of these New England colonists. One of these was allegiance to his King; the other was loyalty to himself. We do not think a person dreamed of the change which was to come. Independence, you must remember, was a term born during those momentous days. The school-teacher and patriot, Nathan Hale, in making a speech before a Connecticut audience at town meeting, used the word **independence**, and it had to be explained.

The Town Meeting. We have shown you already something of the town meeting and its latent power. Every town in Massachusetts was to all intents and purposes a little republic by itself. It was here the boldest and most far-thinking dared to express sentiments they hardly ventured to speak of at home. The town meeting was an institution peculiar to Massachusetts—to New England. It was here the Colonial spirit prevailed, and it was here Colonial utterances were more and more common.

British Blindness. It does seem a bit strange these Royal Governors, British rulers, could not have foreseen the coming shadow, which was to obscure the sun. It was a political cloud, but as often as it was dispersed, it gathered again. With all her wars and extravagances Great Britain was in need of money. To get this she resolved to make her colonies help her. In her own estimation, in her own opinion, she had helped them fight her colonial wars. She had paid her bills. Now was it

asking too much for her to ask them to help her pay some of these bills? The colonists had really fought their own wars, and paid their own bills.

The Oratory of Otis. On a February, in 1761, James Otis made a famous speech. This was a speech which set the people wild. It did not make them wild with insane thoughts, but it put them to thinking. It was not of a nature to inflame their minds with passion, but it set them to thinking, to talking, to protesting against an unjust act. Said the young lawyer, James Otis, as he argued against the wrongs of the Acts of Assistance, before the court in the old town house at the head of Washington Street, he closed with these daring words:

"I am determined, sir, to my dying day to oppose with all the powers and faculties God has given me all such instruments of slavery on the one hand and villainy on the other as this writ of assistance is. * * * I oppose that kind of power the exercise of which, in former periods of English history, cost one King of England his head and another his throne."

These were bold words for a British subject to say. That speech of James Otis fell upon men's ears like the trumpet call of Freedom. John Adams, a young man who had just been admitted to the bar, listened and remembered. He said of him, "His words were a flame of fire. * * * With a prophetic glance into the future, and a rapid flow of eloquence, he hurried all before him. The seeds of patriots and heroes were then and there sowed. Every man appeared to go away, as I did, ready to take up arms against writs of assistance. Then and there was the first scene of the first act of opposition to the arbitrary claims of Great Britain. Then and there the child Independence was born. In fifteen years—that is, in 1776—he grew to manhood and declared himself free."

The Stamp Act. So Great Britain passed the Stamp Act and tried to reap from its harvest. Now you must understand that the Massachusetts colonists were the most advanced thinking people in the world at this time. Their ancestors had suffered in the school of experience. They had left, along with an independent spirit, traditions which told them to beware of yielding to oppression. The Stamp Act laid a duty on every piece of paper on which anything of value could be written or printed. It was the British way to raise money for the Crown. Paying a few cents, now and then, and no one would feel it.

Samuel Adams. A resolute defender of the American people and a righteous speaker and worker in the cause



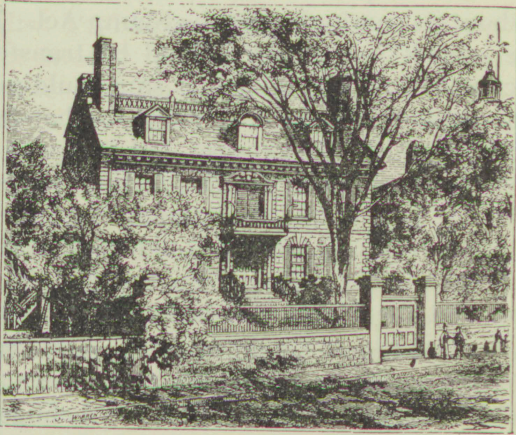
SAMUEL ADAMS

of the colonists, he had been educated for the ministry. He was a good talker and an ardent thinker. He was born in Boston in 1722, and he was barely over twenty years of age before he had dared to challenge a discussion of the question, "Whether it be lawful to resist the supreme magistrate, if the commonwealth otherwise cannot be preserved." This shows what the people were thinking of. Adams was strongly opposed to the Stamp

Act, and he favored action in behalf of the colonists. We shall hear from him again.

James Otis. The masses understood. If they yielded in this they would be called upon to yield again. A young man of fiery tongue and searching eloquence retorted:

"We are not represented in Parliament and taxation without representation is tyranny." The people took up this cry. This was in 1765, and Otis had already published, in 1764, a matchless document entitled "The Rights of the Colonies Vindicated." He next moved to have delegates chosen to meet and discuss this matter. This act met with approval, and this was the first decisive step taken in the cause of independence.



HANCOCK HOUSE

So deeply was this bold patriot dreaded that some of his enemies mobbed him and dealt him blows which robbed him of his reason, so he fell early in the strife, though he lived until 1783, when he was killed by a stroke of lightning.

John Hancock. Born at Quincy, in 1737, this ardent patriot was the son of Reverend John Hancock, of Braintree, and he was a gentleman of worth. We speak of this especially as many of the wealthy men, not daring to trust their fortunes with the poorer class of "rebels," became Tories, or as they liked to consider themselves,

"Loyalists," that is loyal to the King. John Hancock visited England in 1760, and he witnessed the coronation of George III. He was a member of the Provincial Congress, where he was active against the British ministry. Like Samuel Adams, when General Gage tried to settle the differences by pacific measures, he was not exempted from pardon. We shall not forget him.

Stamp Act Repealed. The leading topic for conversation was the Stamp Act. No business could be legally done without its coming under the Stamp Act. No paper could be issued; no property could be transferred, no legal document could be made; no ship could put to sea; no person could be married, without the hateful stamp. It was not so much the expense, but it was a restraint upon their personal liberty. The feeling was so strong against it; the people talked so much; the objection became so far-spread and intense, it did awaken the British Court. In the middle of May, 1766, the glad tidings came to Boston that the Stamp Act had been repealed.

The news had been brought by a brigantine from London. Within an hour the bells of the town began to ring. The cannons began to boom. A huge bon-fire was lighted on Beacon Hill, which lighted the sea for miles. Business had been idle, for nothing could be done. Ships that had been lying at anchor for months, sent their ensigns high into the beautiful May evening. All the people could say and think was the simple expression:

"The Stamp Act has been repealed. We are saved."

In honor of this happy event a day of festivities was given over to rejoicing. Boston Common was given over to the wild jubulations of the merry throng. Yes, the Stamp Act was now a thing of the past, but trouble had only begun.

The Tax on Tea. If defeated in one direction Great Britain turned its attention in another. In 1767, another

bill to levy duties on paper, glass and tea became a law. Again the people, the element bound to oppose the English rule, arose and denounced the new law. Tea was expected to yield the greatest revenue, and against this the population became more bitter than ever. Families refused to use, sell or buy an ounce of tea. Hundreds of families signed papers which declared they would not drink tea until the law was repealed. The young women were equally as patriotic.

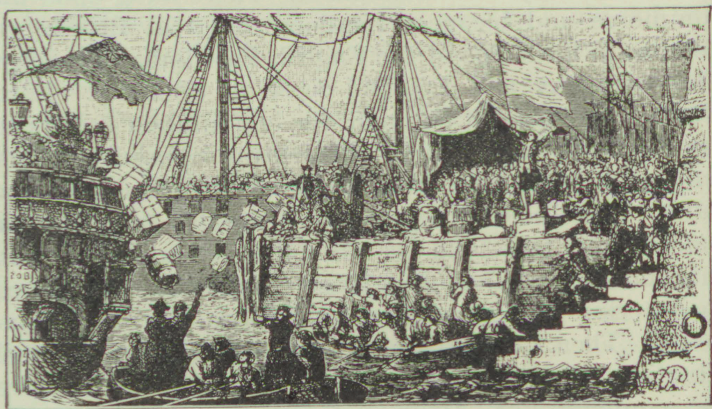
English Problems. This problem related to England and not directly to New England. There hung upon the commerce and business relations of Great Britain an octopus in the shape of the English East India Company. This company and England were in difficulty. Lord North had loaned it one and one-half million dollars to save it from bankruptcy. Americans refused to drink tea which had come from England on account of the duty. East India Company was expected to pay their indebtedness largely in tea. But the navigation Act said this should be delivered in England and then re-shipped to America. This company paid England a tax of six-pence. Then Lord North, who failed to grasp the real situation, offered to repay the British tax and to have the company tax America three pence. This really favored America so far as the tea was concerned. The Parliament consented. The directors of the East India Company knew the spirit of the American colonists better than the rest. They urged to deliver that tea free, but the King said no. "There must be one tax to keep the right to tax." So the company chartered ships and sent the tea to American ports, arousing all of the fiery opposition which had been felt against the Stamp Act.

The right of enforcing tax laws was not discussed so much now as the right to independence. In different ports different measures were taken to stop the unloading of this tea. In Boston a town meeting was held,

which lasted all day. A vote was taken that the tea should be shipped back to England. The consignees replied that they would with a permit from Governor Hutchinson. This permit Governor Hutchinson refused to give.

Then, grave Sam Adams, his rugged face furrowed with anxiety, arose and quietly facing the chairman, said in a clear tone:

"This meeting can do nothing more to save the country."



DESTRUCTION OF THE TEA

Men upon the streets saw a body of men disguised as Indians taking their way toward the ships riding at anchor. They were joined by another party from the south, until nearly fifty men met at the wharves where the vessels lay. No doubt this had been carefully planned out in secrecy while the town meeting had gone on. A crowd followed from the Old South Meeting House, where the audience had gathered, and others joined them. They saw the Indians set a guard to keep people from the ships. The rest of the company took possession and

tea-chest after tea-chest was lifted by men apparently trained to the work, and their sides smashed in. Then the contents were allowed to fall into the sea. Before midnight all of the tea was floating on the waves, and ebb tide took it out to sea. There were almost two-hundred and fifty chests and one hundred half chests.

Then the "Indians" quietly retired, and in the morning the way Boston had received the tea was sent to Great Britain. Excitement prevailed there. Those who were inclined to be friendly to America were now shouted down. Franklin had just arrived and he was insulted.

"The calm philosopher, without reply,

Withdrew, and gave his country liberty."

The outcome of this action was the Boston Port Bill, as it is called here, which became a law by its passage, and Boston's port was closed. Its purpose was to send its business to other maritime towns. Governor Hutchinson, a descendant of Anne Hutchinson, was recalled to England, and the government of Massachusetts was given over to the military controlled by Thomas Gage. The great question of human liberty was no longer a question. England would send a few regiments of soldiers who would soon subjugate Massachusetts. We have followed this rising quarrel, step by step, and now we will see its sequel.

British ships were sent to put down the insurrections. But the spirit of liberty spread. Public meetings, attended by excited mobs, met almost daily upon the Common. John Hancock owned a sloop named Liberty, which was seized by an English ship-of-war. This brought a crowd to witness the sight. A boat belonging to the collector was seized and burned on the Common. This was in 1768, and in 1770 a boy was killed, accidentally, by a royalist. The funeral of the boy was made a scene of wild excitement. The people seemed to have lost their reason.

The Boston Massacre. We now come to a situation which was more irritating than any that had gone before. On October 2, 1769, seven hundred men, with muskets loaded, came into Boston and encamped upon the Common. A month later two more regiments joined these and the thousand armed men went into winter camp in the heart of the city. Armed men are not suppose to be sent into a peaceful country and set up in watch of them. Boston had a population of about twelve thousand then, so you see this looked pretty bad for the people. To make matters worse, these soldiers had been enlisted from the lowest ranks, so were not easily held within decent bounds. They were not only insolent but overbearing, so there was one quarrel after another with the sailors and citizens, until at last came the Boston Massacre.

By March the feeling had grown tense. Rival parties, soldiers and rope-makers, had a lively scuffle and both sides came out considerably worse for the encounter. Another tussel was planned, but stopped. On the evening of the fifth, two young men in trying to pass a sentinel without recognizing him, and the latter in trying to stop them got into a scramble. This took place at the foot of the street now known as Cornhill. A short distance away stands the statue of Samuel Adams, the patriot of that day.

Though the quarrel in itself was slight, it called others to the place. A body of the people of Boston appeared, and they began to jeer at a sentinel stationed in front of the Custom House. This building stood on the north side of King Street, now known as State Street, and at the corner of the present Devonshire Street. To escape the sentinel tried to enter the Custom House, but found the door locked. A storm of snow-balls now rained about his head. Six soldiers were sent to his relief, and the officer of the day, Captain Preston, was sent for.

Both parties knew the soldiers must not fire until an order was given them by a civil magistrate. It was an exciting time. The citizens were insulting and tried to make the soldiers open fire. Captain Preston held his men back, until a soldier was hit upon the head by a club. He took hasty aim and fired. The attack had begun and seven or eight other soldiers fired. Three of the mob were killed, the first a colored man, two mortally wounded and five or six others hurt. The mob then fled and Captain Preston called off his men.

Hutchinson's Mistake. Thomas Hutchinson was Governor, and while the drums beat to arms, and the Twenty-ninth Regiment paraded King Street, he addressed the excited people from the balcony of the Town House. He promised everything fair, but he would contradict himself soon after. The leaders of the "rebels" insisted that the British violate their personal rights by maintaining a guard of soldiery over them. This idea is plain in the Declaration of Independence, which says: "he has kept among us, in times of peace, standing armies without the consent of our legislature."

A town meeting was held the next day at Faneuil Hall, and the governor called upon to prove or retract his words. He said the troops were under command of General Gage, who was in New York. Then, like the weak man he was, he said, "Colonel Dalrymple would withdraw the Twenty-ninth Regiment to the castle in the Bay."

Still at odds with the military, a committee of the citizens, with Sam Adams at their head, waited upon Governor Hutchinson, and in the argument that followed, Adams replied by making the speech which won the day:

"Sirrah, if you have the power to take away one regiment you can take two. Nothing less will satisfy the people."

Governor Hutchinson finally gave way and so, out of the Boston Massacre came the popular triumph, and the two British régiments were known as "Sam Adam's regiment."

Captain Preston surrendered and he was tried for murder. To show the fairness of the trial his lawyers to defend him were two patriots, Josiah Quincy and John Adams, a cousin of Samuel Adams. You will hear of both of them again.

Captain Preston was acquitted, but two of his soldiers were proven guilty of manslaughter. These poor fellows, though the cowardly Hutchinson might have pardoned them, were branded in the hollow of their right hand.

Boyish Patriotism. The boys and girls caught the patriotism of their parents. So, when the British soldiers carelessly broke up the sport of the boys' coasting ground and stopped their sport, some of the larger of the aggrieved party met and talked the matter over. It was decided that they should call upon General Gage and lay the matter before him. So to General Gage they marched, firmly but respectfully, and told him their errand. When they had finished and stood on tip-toe waiting for his reply, he simply said:

"Why have you come to me?"

"Because you are the one who can stop them. We ask, sir, that you stop them."

"Like your fathers, little rebels. And you have come to talk rebellion to me."

It was fortunate that the spokesman was a level-headed youth. If he felt vexed, he did not show it, as he calmly continued, as if he had not heard the words:

"Our fathers did not send us. They do not know of what has been done or what we are doing. Your soldiers destroyed our skating ground; they trod down our snow hills. We asked them not to do it, but they laughed at us. They insulted us, your soldiers. We spoke to the

captain, and he sent us away without saying a word of apology. They did it again yesterday. We can stand it no longer."

The air of General Gage had changed. Instead of his insolent manner, he showed interest, saying to an officer:

"Do you hear that? The children draw in the love of freedom with the air they breathe."

Turning to the boys he said kindly:

"You may go. If any of my soldiers disturb you again, let me know. I will punish them."

During the summer of 1774 British troops continued to come, until at the end of the year there were eleven regiments of the Red Coats, as the British soldiers were called in Boston. Still, when General Gage began to act he found himself a Governor only in name. His official powers were ignored. So the reign of the Royal Governors came to an end.

A Provincial Congress. The native inhabitants of Eastern Massachusetts became active. They established a Provincial Congress with Concord as their meeting place. Seeing the danger ahead, and fearing war, called upon the people to arm. It took measures to store cannon and ammunition at Concord. To test out the feelings of the colonists and to test, as well, the ability of his men for the tramp, Earl Percy marched five regiments over Boston Neck into the country. Along Washington Street, where the water flowed on both sides, up Roxbury Hill, keeping on to Jamaica Plain, the British marched, with drums and fifes playing insolently "Yankee Doodle."

Naturally the Provincial Congress was very much provoked. It appointed its celebrated "Committee of Safety," and sought to stop further "disturbances" like that. They were ready for war, only General Gage must strike the first blow.

The Lexington Alarm. No doubt this attack had been in the mind of General Gage and his associates for some

time. Two officers had been out to Concord looking over the country and planning, as it proved, the best way to go. So on the evening of April 18, 1775, eight hundred soldiers embarked in boats of the navy near the place where the old Providence Station stood. The good people of Boston were supposed to be in bed fast asleep.

The little army of British soldiers were ferried across to Lechmere's Point, not far from where the Court House of to-day stands. It must be remembered that no bridge in that day led from Boston on any side. Unknown to them, with all their caution, a messenger had been sent ahead of them, warning the people of their peril. Dr. Warren had got an inkling of this movement, so he had arranged to have lanterns hung out to warn a messenger he had asked to take the news to Lexington and Concord. This messenger was Paul Revere, an engraver on the Street. This man had already made two perilous rides, one to Virginia and the other to Portsmouth, N. H., on critical missions, and Dr. Warren knew he could be trusted. But in case he did fail another had been selected to ride a different way on the same mission. His name was William Dawes.

Presently the lantern shone, and though every boat was supposed to have been taken by the enemy, Paul Revere had one waiting, and he rowed swiftly across the river with muffled oars. He reached the Charlestown shore to be met by one of the enemy. It didn't take the engraver long to fell him and springing into his saddle he rode away on his dangerous errand.

Betrayed. "The British troops will never get what they are after!" declared an indiscreet patriot, where he was overheard by Earl Percy, high in the British command. Aware what the idle words might mean Percy hastened to the Province House, where he expected to find General Gage. He found his chief in bed, but he was awake enough after listening to the message.

"I have been betrayed!" he cried. "Let no man leave the town."

Paul Revere was well on the road towards Lexington, hours ahead arousing the sleeping families with the cry:

"The Red Coats! Be ready to meet them."

So, with one or two oppositions, Revere rode on until he had reached Lexington. The alarm had been so widely given that by two o'clock one hundred and thirty militia had assembled under Captain John Parker. No evidence of an enemy being seen, Captain Parker believed the alarm had been false, so he discharged his men. But he did take the precaution to warn them to be in readiness to answer in case the drum beat its call.

Paul Revere had roused Sam Adams and John Hancock at their stopping place, and his horse crippled he was obliged to stop here. He did find a young man who lived in Concord, and he promised to return to his home with the news. Dawes, unknown to Revere, had already covered this part of the route and was riding swiftly on to Concord. So Concord was not likely to be ignored.

Meanwhile the British troops were coming, and their officers riding ahead went back to say that "five hundred American militia had assembled." Finally, just as the day was breaking in the chilly April morning, Major Pitcairn rode upon Lexington Common. He saw some of the Provincials waiting to receive him.

"Why don't you lay down your arms!" yelled Pitcairn. The rebels did not retreat. He saw the flash of a gun. Till his dying day at Bunker Hill he declared he did not give the order to fire. Captain Parker formed his men and ordered them not to fire, but he did say:

"If they mean to have war, let it begin here."

The British fired, and nine patriots fell dead. Several were wounded. The sun rose over the sea-girt hills with a warm, mellow glow little in keeping with the warlike spirit of man. Here Colonel Smith joined Major Pit-

cairn, and they pressed on towards their destination, Concord. Two of their men had been shot, and the horse of Major Pitcairn had been wounded. Still undaunted and unfearing the invaders pushed ahead.

Concord had been told of their coming. Dawes and Prescott had performed their duty, and Concord was waiting for the foe. Colonel Barrett in command, seeing they were outnumbered, withdrew his force over North Bridge across the Concord River. The British went on with their work of destruction. They found no ammunition; they found no store of provision. The



CONCORD BRIDGE

people had carefully removed it the day before. Then the firing at North Bridge turned the attention of friend and foe in that direction.

The Fight at North Bridge. Minute Men had been pouring in from neighboring towns. These armed men met with Colonel Barrett. They saw the town had been fired. The court house was in flames. Seeing the knot of patriots formed across the bridge, Colonel Smith volunteered to scatter the guard. Impatient to join in the fray, Isaac Davis, of the Acton company, uttered the words that have lived for a hundred and fifty years:

"There is not a man in my company that is afraid to go."

Colonel Barrett bade the column to pass the bridge, but not to fire unless they were fired upon. We see the respect for law in the speech:

"It's the King's highway, and we have the right to march upon it, if we march to Boston. Forward, march."

They advanced to the air of "The White Cockade," which was the liveliest tune their fifes could play.

The British soldiers under Laurie crossed over the bridge and began to take up the planks. Major Buttrick, who commanded the attacking party, ordered his men to advance at quick-step. When they were within a few rods, the English fired three times. Then Isaac Davis, the Acton Captain and Abner Hosmer were killed. Then Major Buttrick gave the order to fire. The British now retreated. The Provincials now crossed the bridge and a portion of them ascended the hill behind the meeting house on the right of the town. An English soldier had been killed and half a dozen wounded.

It was noon before the British began to leave Concord. They had been sorely disappointed. They had not found the stores they had come for. They had met with violent opposition. It was plain now the "rebels were not to be frightened." The American revolution had opened in earnest, and with no uncertain end.

The minute men started in pursuit of the retreating foe. They seemed to arise from behind every tree. Many of those men had fought through the French and Indian War. They were masters of bush fighting. One after another of the tired soldiers fell. Poor Smith, who had been so vain-glorious in the morning, came back to Lexington, after thirty miles of tramping, in no mood to repeat his morning huzzas.

The British soldiers were saved from utter defeat by the arrival here of Lord Percy's re-inforcements of

twelve hundred men, strong, fresh for the battle. They had promised to be there earlier. They had barely come in season to save the shattered wreck of the proud Red Coats, who had been told it was a day's frolic. Pretty serious frolic it had proved when, at sunset, they crossed Charlestown Neck. This was the ending of what proved to be the beginning of a long, long day of eight years of fighting.

The Drummer Boy of Lexington. Bugle boys and drummer boys always have a great interest to those who read of battle. It seems to me in every great fight some brave young musician has led the victors to the triumph. The Drummer Boy of Lexington was William Dimond. He was a native of Acton, and he volunteered in Captain Parker's company. His drum beat its loud tattoo throughout that spring day, and if it did not ring with the joy of victory it bore the triumph of patriotism. Not only did he drum here, but he went through the entire Revolution, doing a patriotic service. In 1781 he was drummer for Captain John Hayward's company of Acton. At the close of the war he removed to Peterborough, New Hampshire, where he was buried, and he has descendants now living. The little old drum which sounded the call to arms in the opening struggle of the Revolution is now in Lexington, a rare relic of long ago.

The Young Messenger of Lexington. Along with William Dimond I want to rank young David Haradon, the boy Paul Revere. His grandfather, although past ninety, fought all day among the bravest. Falling at last sorely wounded, he called his grandson to him, and said:

"David, mount old Bet and ride up the Merrimack valley, to tell the people the British are in arms and war is upon us. Do not stop until you find John Stark. I fought with him in the Indian wars."

David Haradon did as he was bid, and he found the Hero of the Horican, John Stark, at work in his saw

mill. Upon listening to David's message John Stark said to his helper:

"Shut down the gate, Theophilus, and leave the log on the carriage. Tell Molly the Red Coats are in arms and I am off to war."

Without stopping to go to his house, he rode post-haste to Cambridge where he was placed in command of the First New Hampshire regiment.

Where the Minute Men Stood. A restful calm and only the memory of history today hangs over the scene where the Minute Men formed and went forth to begin the cruel fight which lasted for over seven years. The peaceful quiet of the beautiful common is most fittingly pictured by a recent writer, F. Laurison Bullard.

"Lexington Common, basking in the sunshine of a day in June under the deep-blue sky, with the blare of an automobile horn as its only tocsin and a legion of smiling sight-seers as its invaders, is so suave and peaceful, that, but for its tablets and monuments with their stirring inscriptions and the bronze figure of Captain Parker, rifle in hand, upon the stones, you would suppose it must always have been a place of undisturbed repose.

"But it was over that road that Paul Revere clattered, and from that house a few rods away John Hancock and Samuel Adams made their hurried escape. Just here stood the old belfry from which clanged the alarm that brought the Minute Men to the common. The boulder across there marks the line of the Provincials and beyond it is the house to whose door Jonathan Harrington dragged himself, sorely wounded, that he might die at his wife's feet."

One of the most noted spots upon the Common is the great boulder, where the aroused men lined up, and the memorable words of Captain Parker are inscribed:

"Stand your ground. Don't fire unless fired upon, but if they mean to have war, let it begin here."

If Major Pitcairn believed he was routing a thoughtless mob, he little thought he was beginning a war which would end with a separation of the colonies from the mother country.

Artemas Ward. The First Commander-in-Chief of the American Revolution was Artemas Ward, the son of Nahum and Martha (How) Ward, born in Shrewsbury, Mass., November 26, 1727. His parents were prominent and popular in local affairs. His father was active in public affairs. The boyhood of Artemas was not different from the early days of most boys living at that period. He was fitted for college and entered Harvard in 1744, when in his sixteenth year. He ranked well with his colleagues, and graduated in 1748.

After his graduation he began to teach school, a position he finally resigned from, when he planned to get married to Sarah Trowbridge, the daughter of the local clergyman. His father purchased a home for him and hither the young man began to keep house, while tending a store from an ell of the house.

He soon began his activities as a public man. Chosen as Tax Collector, an office he held for many years, he was appointed a Justice of the Peace, an office of importance in his day. Following this he was elected as a representative to the General Court, where he became a man of influence. The French and Indian War soon breaking out he assisted in the enlistment of men for the service, and was himself made Major of Colonel William Williams' regiment, and saw during the next year some active service. Colonel Ward came out of this war broken in health, but not in spirit.

Colonel Ward was not aroused by the British aggressions until the Stamp Act awoke him to take an active part in the cause of the colonists. Patriotic Boston, whose feelings were aroused by James Otis and Samuel Adams was rivaled by the country element, made up of

farmers and mechanics which were slower to become interested. But without them the cause of the colonists would have been lost. In the controversy begun in the Legislature Ward soon became closely connected with Samuel Adams, and this friendship was not broken.

Feeling that Ward was too influential a man to hold a military commission that of Colonel was removed from him, without regard to the excellent record it held. For ten years preceding the opening of the Revolution Ward was heart and soul with the patriotic side. He did all he could do, and when war was imminent his old regiment made him its leader. On October 26, 1774, Congress, feeling the necessity of being prepared to meet the enemy, elected three men as heads of the Militia. The three were Jedediah Preble, Artemas Ward and Seth Pomeroy. The latter declined on account of his age. It is curious to note that General Preble, who had seen service in the French and Indian War was sixty-seven, and General Pomeroy, who had been active in the early wars, was sixty-eight at this time. He said he was too old to take an active part. Ward was then forty-seven, and had seen active service. Preble never accepted his commission. General Ward became the Commander-in-Chief of the Massachusetts at the very outset. At this period of the struggle the army was not sufficiently organized for him to exercise the authority he should have had at the battle of Bunker Hill.

General Ward retired from the army on account of poor health March 20, 1777. But he was not idle for three years. He served as President of the Council, which office made him Governor, as there was no executive head until in 1780, when the new Constitution was accepted.

He was elected to the United States Congress in 1791 and served two terms.

He died October 28, 1800, in his 72nd year. So passed from the scene of active life a good and well balanced man.

Bunker Hill. This noted battle-ground, one of the decisive struggles in the world's history, though neither side could claim a victory, was named for George Bunker, an English Puritan, who came to Charlestown in 1633. He supported the Reverend Mr. Wheelwright for a time, but after the minister left Massachusetts he was well received. He was appointed a Constable of Charlestown, and in 1639, the General Court granted him fifty acres of land. So he owned this hill, and for that reason it was known as "Bunker Hill." It was the highest point of land in the Peninsula of Charlestown, and it overlooked the northern part of Boston. Dorchester Heights, a similar position on the south, which comprised the hills of South Boston, commanded the southern part of Boston and the harbor. The importance of these two positions became apparent early in the conflict.

The Militia Men. Immediately after the fights at Lexington and Concord the militia of New England soon began to gather at Cambridge. It is surprising how rapidly the news flew. Messengers carried it north, south, east and west. It was carried to Great Britain.

Within two weeks Massachusetts raised over 11,000 troops. Connecticut sent over two thousand under Putnam, Gridley and Knowlton. New Hampshire men rallied to the number of nearly 1,500 under Stark, James Reed, MacClary and others. Rhode Island did herself credit by sending one thousand men under Greene.

The headquarters of the patriots was at Cambridge, and General Artemas Ward, a veteran of the French and Indian War, was Commander-in-Chief. Prescott was really the leader of the fighting troops upon the day of

the battle. But the militia was not organized sufficiently for all to fall under one command.

Prescott, in his headquarters at Cambridge, learned on June 13 that General Gage planned to occupy Dorchester Heights on June 18. As an offset to this, some of the boldest of the patriots resolved to fortify the Charlestown peninsula to the north.

The Charlestown peninsula, across the Charles River tidewater, was about a mile in length and about one-half that in width. It was opposite Boston. The Charles or Cambridge river, flowed south of the peninsula, and the Mystic or Medford River into the bay north of Charlestown Neck. This was the ridge connecting the peninsula with the mainland. The "rivers" were really bays of tide-water.

Charlestown was on the Boston side of the peninsula. The Mystic River side was farm and grazing land.

Bunker Hill, designed to be occupied by the patriots, began at the Neck and ran up to the height of one hundred and ten feet. It sloped on two sides and descended by a ridge to a hill seventy-five feet in height. This was Breed's Hill. The redoubt and the intrenchments were on the lower slope, which was Breed's Hill. Following the battle, which made it famous, it was given the name of Bunker Hill.

The occupation of this hill having been decided upon, Colonel Prescott's regiment of 436 men, Frye's of 493, and Bridge's of 315 men were ordered to be in readiness to march on Friday evening, June 16, 1775. Later Captain Samuel Gridley's company of forty-nine men and two field-pieces, and then two other artillery companies and four small cannon, were added.

When the morning dawned it was seen by the British that the audacious Yankees had raised intrenchments six feet high. A thousand patriots, working in the dark, and within the call of the enemy and answer, "all is

well," had done this. Four British ships were within gun-shot. One of these opened fire at sight of what had been done, but this was stopped. But soon a British battery on Copp's Hill in Boston was ordered to fire but the work went on in spite of the firing.

Boston was wild with excitement. The rebel lines had been pushed forward. What did it mean? But those self-same soldiers, working in the hot June sun, were suffering for water. They had failed to take sufficient food. They asked to be relieved. But Prescott insisted that the post of honor was theirs. They had dug their works. They should remain to defend the position.

The Redoubt. The Americans had been able to build in the night and morning a redoubt nearly eight rods square. It stood where the monument now stands. It was built to face the town. From this a breast-work was built for three hundred feet to the edge of a gulley. Here a stone wall over-topped by a two-rail fence ran down toward Mystic River. Behind this, with the space between the rails filled in with new-mown hay, Prescott's men stationed themselves to prevent a flank movement by the British. Gridley had shown good military tactics in constructing his meagre defence.

General Ward, in Cambridge, if supposed to be supreme in command, had very little to do with the maneuvers that followed. Of one thing he stood in fear and was prepared to meet it. If Gage came out to attack Cambridge, he must be ready to meet him. Again, if the British did, as it was reported they were going to do, attack the Americans on the rear, he would have enough to do. Fortunately for the Provincials, General Gage did not think it advisable to run the gauntlet of going between the two divisions of the American forces. He may have been right; the chances are he was wrong.

Boston was excited when it became known that Gage, the British General, had planned to storm the American

forces by marching up the hill slopes in front. It was noon of a hot June day when he was ready to begin. Then, the men were ordered in full pack, with blankets and provisions, to attack a position just across the fork of the Charles River. The cannonade grew in volume and fury, as the British forces were ordered to cross to Charlestown.

"It must have been a beautiful yet strangely sad sight on that clear June afternoon. The barges were moving in pairs and carrying on their errand of oppression and death the British soldiers in their scarlet uniforms. The glistening bayonets and the polished cannon, all seemed to be teeming with life and energy. To hear the incessant cannonade from the ships added to the awe and terror of the scene. It is not surprising that men who had never been in battle were excited and faint-hearted at such a crisis. The wonder is they remained to acquit themselves like men."

General Howe on the English side landed his forces without opposition, and he examined the American defense. He asked for reinforcements, and while he was waiting he placed his cannon in position. Here seems a singular coincidence. The field artillery on both sides were nearly useless from the fact that the guns and ammunition did not fit.

Great excitement prevailed in the American camp. Bells were rung and drums beat. Greater excitement reigned in Cambridge than on Breed's Hill, where the workmen had ceased their labor only at eleven A. M. Reinforcements were called for and two regiments from the New Hampshire men at Cambridge were sent at once. These two hundred men took their position behind the rail fence under Lieutenant-Colonel Wyman. Colonel Reed arrived with his New Hampshire men and took position at the rail fence. Stark now hastened from Medford with his regiment, so all of New Hampshire's twelve

hundred soldiers were in the battle. On the Mystic River side from low water to the end of the fence was an open space, which had caught the eye of the British General. Here he had planned to make a flank movement, and once he had gained this there would be little hope for the redoubt.

Stark Occupies the Open Space. As he passed along the side of Bunker Hill the military eye of Stark saw the advantage in case the British should secure the open link in the chain. So he placed his men in the broken place, and as there were no means of protection to offset the rail fence, he ordered his soldiers to pile up stones from the fence to the water's edge. This was done as quickly as possible.

British reinforcements had arrived. These troops, with those who had come first, were divided into three columns. The first of these was given the task of assaulting the redoubt. The second was to attack the rail fence. The third, consisting of the best of the British army, was to try and carry the flank movement, where Stark and his men were lying behind the stone barricade.

The British army of that day was the best trained and the best fitted of the soldiers of the world. And these men on Bunker Hill were not inferior to any England had. The three columns moved forward with the precision of veterans on dress parade. They began to fire at a considerable distance, but they fired with the mathematical precision of men who did not look at their victims. Most of these shots went over the heads of the besieged, but inexperienced soldiers waited for them to come—their red coats shining in the sun, their firearms glistening in the sunlight, their erect carriages showing with beautiful, yet terrible, effect.

Meanwhile the Americans, knowing the folly of wasting ammunition and realizing at this early stage their short allowance, had ordered the marksmen to hold their

fire until the word should be given for them to pour their leaden hail into the dazzling ranks. So they watched and waited, these veterans of a different kind of warfare, until the word was given. Few among them were not good marksmen, and they knew their skill. But, hark! the British were almost up to the line, within eight rods, when a single shot rang out from Stark's regiment. John Simpson had broken the order, and the yell of his victim told with effect. The shot was the signal for a volley—a blaze of fire—and sent to the ground every other man of the front ranks. The others crowded over the fallen men, but a second discharge, more deadly than the first, mowed the British veterans down like grass before the scythe. The ranks, which had never been broken before, now fled in disorder.

Then Howe and Pigot and the others rallied them for another display of British bravery. Again they went to the assault, and again they met such a shower of bullets, that no mortal men could withstand. So they ran from the field of death, in spite of all their leaders could do. Many of these, Pitcairn among them, would never cheer them on again. They did not stop until the water's edge, where they had landed, was reached.

Never had there been a braver assault. Never had there been a braver defence.

Now the Americans, foreseeing the result, called for troops. If men could not come, for God's sake, send them powder and ball. Where then was the army in Cambridge? Where then was Putnam? Neither men nor ammunition came to help out Prescott and his tired men, who had worked all night and fought nearly all day. Men to help out Knowlton and Reed at the rail fence; men to help out the heroic Stark and his soldiers down at the flank. The call was made in vain.

General Howe rallied his men at last. Order and discipline prevailed. Again the lines were formed. They had

discovered an unprotected space between the fence and the redoubts. They abandoned trying to force passage against Stark, and now they charged at the point of the bayonet. The Americans, with empty pouches and cartridge boxes, with only fifty bayonets, waited anxiously the final charge. Many of them clubbed their muskets and so held the enemy at bay—for a few minutes. Then the retreat was begun in an orderly manner. But they lost more men now than they had at all. Then fell the brave General Warren, fighting as a private. General Gage had said that his presence was worth more than five hundred men. He had sent Paul Revere on his midnight ride. He had been the bravest and the wisest of the patriots.

The Connecticut and the New Hampshire troops, at the rail fence and the flank, were not so hard pressed now, and they aided the retreat of Prescott and his men. In this retreat fell Major Andrew McClary, the best soldier in New Hampshire. Earlier in the strife Captain Isaac Andrews had been shot, a tried hero of the French and Indian War.

So ended the battle of Bunker Hill. The British claimed a victory. They had learned a lesson, which had cost them dearly. A few more "victories" like that and the war would be lost.

At the time, and after, Bunker Hill was looked upon by those who lived then as a disaster and defeat. The men engaged in it were ashamed to acknowledge it. Twenty-five years and it was the synonym of patriotism and glory. After fifty years and Americans were boasting of the honor of service and distinction of command.

Bunker Hill was America's Thermopylae.

The explanation* for this failure to answer the call of Prescott, which if it had been answered would have

*This inactivity must have been due to cowardice or to jealousy. We know Putnam was out of sorts because he had not been placed in supreme command. Naturally Prescott was the leader of that day, as far as uniting so many factions. Warren, whose appointment to the place, was on the way, nor Stark objected to this fact.—Author.

turned the defeat into a glorious victory, is explained by General Dearborn's account of the battle, whose authority I consider as that of the best, when he says:

When the troops arrived at the summit of Bunker's Hill, we found General Putnam, with nearly as many men as had been engaged in the battle; notwithstanding which no measures had been taken for re-inforcing us, nor was there a shot fired to cover our retreat, or any movement made to check the advance of the enemy to this height. On the contrary General Putnam rode off, with a number of spades and pick-axes in his hands, and the troops that had remained with him *inactive* during the whole of the action, although within a hundred yards of the battle-ground and no obstacle to impede their movement but musket balls.

Colonel William Prescott. This patriot and hero of Bunker Hill was born at Groton, February 20, 1726, and died at Pepperell, October 13, 1795. On receiving the news of the battle of Lexington, he assembled a body of Minute Men, of whom he was made Colonel. He marched with them to Cambridge, and when the Committee of Safety desired to occupy Bunker Hill, he was made the commander of the division. He marched at the head of nearly a thousand men to throw up the intrenchments on the night of the 16th, and with them defended the works on the 17th.

June 17, 1775, will always remain the proudest day in the annals of the Revolution, and Prescott and his companions will always stand first. "Prescott was the hero of that blood-dyed summit. The midnight leader and guard, the morning sentinel, the orator of the opening strife, the cool and deliberate overseer of the entire struggle, the well-skilled marksman of the exact distance at which a shot was certain death. He was the venerable chief in whose bright eye and steady nerve all read their duty. When conduct, skill and courage could do no more, he was the merciful deliverer of the remnant."

He served in the army for two years longer, and was present at the battle of Saratoga as a volunteer in 1777.

Prescott's Rebuke. Colonel Prescott, after the battle of Bunker Hill, remarked to Governor James Bowdoin at a dinner table: "I sent three messengers during the battle to General Putnam, requesting him to come forward and take command, there being no general officer present, and the relative rank of Colonel not having been settled; but that received no answer, and his whole conduct was such, both during the action and the retreat, that he ought to have been shot."

"Had he (Putnam) done his duty, he would have decided the fate of his country in the first action. . . ."
General John Stark.

General Ward considered the battle as that of Charlestown, and he gave the American loss as 115 killed; 305 wounded, and 30 captured. General Gage reported as the British loss 1,054 killed and wounded.

CHAPTER IX

"AMERICA IS FREE!"

While the British soldiers returned to Boston, they held Bunker Hill.

So the June night fell on the troubled city. General Gage slept little that night at the Province House. The victory had cost him too many lives, too much anxiety, too much fear for the future. He had lost over two hundred killed, and more than eight hundred wounded. Worse than that, for his future prospects, what would the end be?

The Prospects of the Provincials. The shadows fell on the homes of the Provincials with scarcely less hope. They had lost one hundred and fifteen killed. Three hundred of their comrades were suffering from British bullets. That was a night of distress and painful anxiety in Cambridge. What would the morrow bring? So, as Butterworth so well said: "It was the saddest night that Boston ever had known, or has ever unto this time seen—that night of the 17th of June, 1775."

War had really begun.

Congress had awakened to this fact, even before Bunker Hill. A session of this body was held at Philadelphia. There it was resolved to raise an army of twenty thousand men, and George Washington was appointed Commander-in-Chief. This was two days before the battle, though no one in Massachusetts knew of this then.

General Washington started for New England, the scene of the opening conflict, at once. His arrival at Cambridge, as he rode in a phaeton, drawn by two horses, is described in a private letter by an eye-witness:

"Just before the Chief came into town the soldiers stationed here in Cambridge were drawn up in a straight line on the Common. It was a very quiet sight to behold some seven or eight thousand militia vieing with each other in the want of waistcoats and of shoes and stockings. As you may imagine, there is a chance here for tailors and cobblers.

"Having advanced near by, the chief mounted a horse, received his sword—it may have been his own—and rode down the line, followed by the under officers. There was the greatest eagerness to see him and to hear the reading of the commission. Washington, by his looks, appeared to esteem the army."

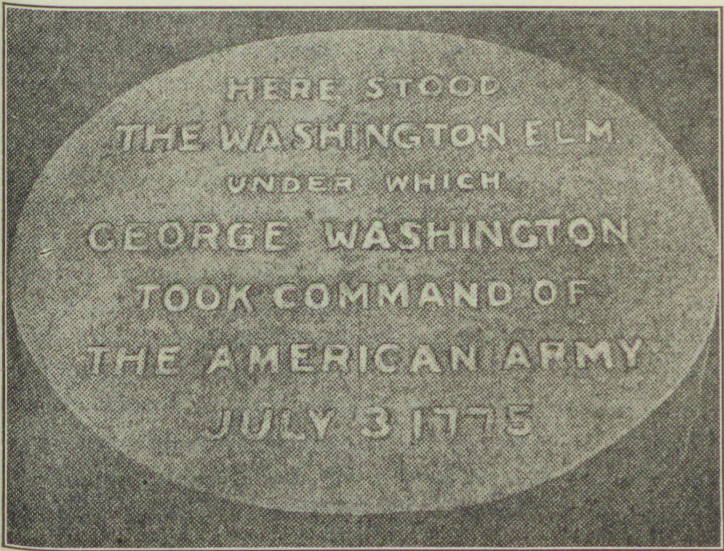
General Washington took command of the American army under an old Elm on Cambridge Green. This tree



WASHINGTON ELM

was already noted. Here had the Apostle Eliot preached to the Indians, and here had all of these incidents become only a passing note from the day Washington honored it with his presence. It was an old tree even then, with a kingly air among other forest monarchs. Its very green leaves and tapering arms drooped

downward as if to protect the one seeking its loving protection: "I am the Washington Elm, the Tree of Liberty." It finally fell before a terrific gale, and its site is marked by a suitable marker. Before that day, for several years, its boughs propped up, it shaded this granite tablet, which read:



WASHINGTON TREE

General Washington took up his headquarters in an old brown, gambrel-roofed house, which stood a short distance from the east section of the Common. But later he moved to the large, old-fashioned mansion, which in more recent years was the home of the poet Henry W. Longfellow.

After the Battle. The first thing of importance the Americans did after the Battle of Bunker Hill was to fortify Prospect Hill, commanding the safety of Cambridge. The works on Winter Hill were made stronger. The roads leading into Boston were all guarded.

On the other hand the British took possession of Dorchester Heights and they held Bunker Hill. There were Provincials in Boston who could not get out. While quiet ruled over the situation, yet the volcanic fire slumbered; it was not extinguished.

So the summer passed, with little action by either of the factions in the field.

Morgan's Riflemen. In August Washington's army was reinforced by about fourteen hundred riflemen, as they were known, coming under the lead of the daring backwoodsman, Daniel Morgan. They came mostly from the valley of the Shenandoah, Virginia. A month later, Rhode Island sent three tons of gun-powder. All in all, the prospects of the Americans were improving. Now, in order to keep an even front to affairs as they developed, we must digress for a little while, in order to describe another campaign in which Massachusetts had an interest.

Arnold's Expedition to Quebec. Colonel Ethan Allen and Benedict Arnold had been rivals in the leadership of the Ticonderoga and Crown Point campaign.. This expedition had its birth in the Berkshire Hills, and Arnold had been delegated commander by the Congress of Massachusetts. Money, ammunition and men had been voted him, and he started into Western Massachusetts, where he expected to raise most of his men. Ethan Allen had already raised a body of Green Mountain Boys for this same purpose, and Allen's men stood by him. In vain Arnold showed his credentials. He must fight as a private or not at all. Crushing his pride, and Arnold was a proud man, he fought nobly through the campaign. But to Allen fell all the praise. To Arnold fell the insults of his enemies.

In his disappointment he turned to General Washington with his plan of capturing Quebec and thus securing the friendship of the French inhabitants of Canada. Washington had favored this project. Quebec, "the Gibraltar of America," made so by nature and the art of man, had ever been regarded as the key to the Canadas. Schuyler had already been sent by way of the Great Lakes into Canada. Arnold proposed a shorter and

quicker route by the vast forests, the hidden swamps, the rushing rivers and unknown dangers of the wilderness. Arnold was given command of this expedition.

Arnold's Men. In giving him this command General Washington spoke these prophetic words: "You are entrusted with a command of the utmost consequence to the liberties of America. Upon your conduct and courage must depend the safety and welfare of the whole country."

Arnold's forces consisted of ten companies of musketeers from Massachusetts, Connecticut and New Hampshire, with three companies of riflemen from Virginia and Pennsylvania, all skilled in woodcraft and fearless of the Indians. Morgan was their leader.

The Overland Trail. Arnold embarked his troops at Newburyport early in September, 1775, and near the end of the month reached their starting point not far from the present city of Augusta. Meeting with minor difficulties for a time, their dangers and hardships increased, day by day. You must remember there were no hotels, no roads, no clearings, not a single civilized feature. The rifle corps went ahead; the loaded boats followed; the troops marched by land. After many weary days—it was now well on in October—the great "carrying place," as it was called then, we should call it a portage now, was passed over. The bank of the Chaudiere was reached. This word in French meant "cauldron." The swift boiling waters of the stream dashed to pieces every boat launched upon it.

Hunger. Their provisions had long since been depleted. Men—and desertion and death had robbed them so not over seven hundred remained—were not only ragged, worn out and disconsolate, but starving. So November 3, the ragged and weary little band of heroes entered a flat, rich country, finely cultivated and dotted with farm-houses. Their terrible journey had been made, but

Arnold was dismayed to find that he had been betrayed by an Indian and the French commander had been told of his coming a month before.

Still undaunted, Arnold was not to be baffled at the very threshold of his triumph, so he went bravely ahead. Stormy weather and lack of facilities held him back, while the garrison in the town was growing stronger, day by day. Then came the glad news that St. Johns had been captured by Montgomery, who was now coming to their aid. That very night Arnold resolved to stake his fortune upon an attack.

The Golden Opportunity. A severe storm had been raging for days. That night it cleared away. In canoes, bought of the Indians, Arnold and his forces crossed the St. Lawrence. By daylight the cliffs had been scaled, and the American flag was waving on the Plains of Abraham under the very walls of the city in front of the Gate of St. John. Now was the golden opportunity. The gate was open and unguarded. The impetuous Arnold was for instant assault. Had they dashed through the gate then success would have been theirs. The time was lost in useless council of war, and Arnold's chance of success forever fled.

The Gate Is Open. In the midst of this parley the startling news was carried to the commander of the garrison that the enemy were upon them. "The Gate of St. John is open!" There was rushing to and fro. The keys could not be found. But ropes and hand-spikes soon made the gate secure. The belated attack of the Americans was defeated. Arnold sent a flag of truce and demanded the surrender of the city. The flag was fired upon and, for a time, the city was safe.

A Victory Lost. Days passed. Word came of the surrender of Montreal, and then the arrival of General Montgomery. Now an assault must be made at once. A fierce storm was raging. It was the last day in the

year. Officers and soldiers did all in their power to save the day. The odds were too great. The brave General Montgomery was killed. The intrepid Arnold fell, bravely urging his men forward, wounded in his legs. Hundreds were dead or dying. The bitter snow that night was the kindest element there, wreathing them in its white mantle of pity. Arnold's expedition, through no fault of his, had been made in vain.

Winter found the British holding Boston. The Americans were watching and waiting. It was a cold winter, which brought much suffering to the patriots. The British were under severe penalty on account of lack of food and the means to be comfortable. General Gage had been succeeded by General Howe, and he had gone to England. Howe, to lessen the number to feed, sent seven hundred of the extreme poor out of Boston. He had to tear down residences to obtain fuel for fires. Everyone was suffering and everyone was complaining.

The Fight for Dorchester Heights. Knowing of the serious situation of the British, Washington planned to recover Boston. His first move would be to take Dorchester Heights. In order to draw the attention of the enemy from the real place he wished to take, General Washington ordered his troops to bombard the town from hills on the west. This was begun on the night of March 2, 1776, and was continued for three nights.

The ruse was highly successful. The British neglected the Heights. Hither Washington was organizing his men, so on the night of March 4, General Thomas left Roxbury for the coveted front. It was a bitter cold night. There was little snow on the ground, but the earth was frozen deep.

Eight hundred picked soldiers acted as a party to guard those who were to follow. Behind these came twelve hundred men, with their tools for work. They had spades, pick-axes and two hundred carts loaded with bundles of hay.

As these carts rumbled along the hard ground, the thunder of cannon in the west could be heard. Still the soldiers toiled silently up the hill, until the top was reached. No alarm had been given, and the men began their work of repeating what had been done on Breed's Hill in June. The task was performed more slowly, as the earth was frozen, but at last a long, broad breastwork had risen on the top of Dorchester Heights.

Just think of the worried Britishers awakening in the morning to discover this new terror commanding their very proximity. A fog had now settled over the lowlands, which made the breastworks loom high into the air. General Howe was not blind to the march which the "rebels" had stolen upon him. Washington might easily besiege the town, with reasonable success.

"He shall pay dearly for that before night," said the British officer.

The Elements Rebel. Anxious to make his attack before Washington could fairly entrench himself, General Howe rallied his troops, two thousand of his best soldiers, and embarked on vessels, with the landing at the foot of the Heights as his objective point.

Now a very strange thing happened. It was not so very strange in itself, but it did seem peculiar it should happen at that time. His vessels had barely weighed anchor, when a violent storm of wind and cold rain began. This increased in fury, so the vessels were driven back into port, glad to have escaped without loss of ships and lives. So Dorchester Heights was saved by the storm.

General Howe was now frightened. He was afraid the Americans would attack him before he could do anything to save himself. So he sent a bold message to Washington, warning him that if he dared to assault Boston he would set the town on fire. This may have been a cowardly threat. That morning, March 17, he discovered breastworks over on Nook's Hill. The Americans were

not idle. So much activity meant the capture of Boston. They now had, not only Dorchester Heights, but they commanded the Neck and the southern end of Boston.

A Council of War. Howe had to act quickly or he would be too late. His ships were in the port, and word was sent for them to be in readiness to sail at any moment—before daylight at the latest. So the troops were hastily mustered. Everything that could be taken with them was taken on ship-board. Guns they could not stop to move were spiked. Shops were broken into and robbed of all that could be used. A stern bitterness—the bitterness born of the defeated—rankled in the hearts of the British, defeated after all. What now was the glory and the cost of Bunker Hill?

Tories. Along with the departing soldiers were certain families, most of them well-to-do, who had decided to go with the troops. They had sided with the British, and now did not dare to remain behind to meet their former friends. All they had—or nearly all—was abandoned. In this hour of darkness, both by night and heart, they felt keen anguish, as they turned reluctantly away from home and native land. Tears of genuine sorrow were shed.

Bunker Hill Avenged. In the morning of the 17th, when the hour is darkest, the British war-ships moved slowly away from the docks. So far the victory of Bunker Hill saddened their hearts with its thoughts.

Howe had barely set sail before the advance guard of Washington's army was in Boston, the General himself riding at the head of his troops, while the inhabitants yelled themselves hoarse with cheers of welcome.

So, nine months after the defeat, the battle of Bunker Hill ended in triumph. The victors had fled. The good news flew over the colonies, and the patriots felt hopeful for the future. Congress thanked Washington, and a medal of honor was ordered to be sent to him.

A few years since the writer was in Quebec, when a small cannon resting peacefully inside the gate was pointed out to him.

"One of the five captured by the British at Bunker Hill," and a smile wreathed his mouth.

"Yes," I replied, as I looked at the rust-eaten relic of a by-gone day; "you have the gun, but we have the hill."

Base of War Changes. With the withdrawal of the British from Boston, the base of the war drifted away from Massachusetts. Many of the men who had fought at Bunker Hill were found elsewhere. Thomas, who did so well in the defence of Dorchester Heights and escaped serious battle, went to Canada, and then was in command of the Southern Army. Here he did valiant service.

When Burgoyne began to plan to plunder New England through Bennington, Massachusetts sent her Nichols to help Stark defend the north, and he was one of the division heads to help carry out the strategy planned to capture Baum and his soldiers. So the enemy was stopped here.

Still later in the war the British landed at Newport and drove the New England troops from the island. But this victory had no lasting results. After the British sailed away to Halifax in 1777, New England was free from the presence of the Red Coats. She had fought her battles and won.

Massachusetts Soldiers Away from Home. If the base of the war had changed, the spirit of the Old Bay State was as patriotic as ever. Her civilians were fighting as earnestly and bravely as ever for American Independence. In Congress and at home, her John Adams, her Benjamin Franklins and John Hancocks were doing their part by tongue and pen.

At the front, her troops were battling as manfully as ever they did at Bunker Hill. Wherever fighting was

being done, it was found that Massachusetts was in the lead. In truth, Washington in his last campaign found that his army was composed almost wholly of New England men. If Washington at first found his soldiers from Massachusetts almost too independent to manage, he soon found them dependable. They proved as brave as they were patriotic.

Finally, when the National Congress was wrangling over the matter of state debts, the argument was advanced that Massachusetts would get much from the refunding acts, while she had suffered less. An investigation then followed, when it was shown that Massachusetts alone had sent more men into the Continental army than all of the states south of the Potomac. This closed the argument over this subject. In fact, New England furnished one-half of all the men sent to the front in the thirteen colonies.

The Revolution had not only started in New England, —Massachusetts— but after it had left her borders she had been as liberal in supporting it as she had been at the outset.

John Adams. Patrick Henry may have excelled John Adams in eloquence, Franklin in sagacity, John Jay in judicial wisdom, Jefferson in acuteness and Washington in judgment, yet this giant of the American Revolution possessed enough of these virtues so he for forty years was a commanding figure in the struggle for independence in this country.

John Adams was born in Braintree October 19, 1735. He was descended from one of the original Puritan families, and he inherited a sturdy love for freedom. He had a keen aptness for education, was college bred, read law and when he was twenty-nine years old he married and removed to Boston, where he soon acquired a good practice. His calling brought him into almost constant contact with the leaders of his day, and he early formed in

his mind an earnest endeavor to inform his friends for the coming conflict. In 1767 he wrote his "Essay on Canon and Civil Law," which was published in Boston and republished in London the following year. He was among the foremost advocates of liberty and freedom from taxation without representation.



JOHN ADAMS

He was made chairman of a committee chosen to draft resolutions to present the Legislature to resist the encroachments of the Crown. He was made a member of that body in 1770, where he fought the cause of the people. On May 6, 1776, he recommended that the colonies adopt "such a government as would, in the opinion of the representatives of the people, best conduct to the happiness and safety of their constituents and America." He fought for this with wonderful energy and eloquence until he had

won the fight. This was the beginning of the Declaration of Independence. He was a member of the Continental Congress, where he did some of the best work of his life. "Daring, tenacious, aggressive, he spoke with such magnificent ardor and such immense power as to bear all before him." He was one of the committee of five to draw up the Declaration, but the work of that document was left to Jefferson. He proposed that Washington should be made Commander-in-Chief of the American army.

He served his country chiefly abroad during the war. First he was in France in company with Franklin to negotiate a treaty of peace and alliance in 1777. He then went to Holland as plenipotentiary; then on various commissions to form treaties with other powers. Our independence having been won, he was sent by Congress as Minister to Great Britain. He always served his country with great ability.

Before the Presidential election in 1787 he returned to this country at his own request and was elected Vice-President, with Washington as President. He served in this capacity under both terms of Washington, and then he was elected as President. Naturally Adams became one of the leading figures in the Federal party, with Washington, Hamilton, Franklin, Jay, Madison and others. Party feeling became so bitter during his term of office that Jefferson was elected over him. He had made enemies in his battle for the Constitution, and his party now in the minority, he withdrew to private life. He had his faults, no doubt, but his virtues and fearless defence of his belief made him a Colossus among his associates. Political feelings had separated him from Jefferson, but on the death of Adams' excellent wife in 1817 the former wrote him a beautiful letter of condolence, so they became friends again, as they had been in the days of the Revolution. He died July 4, 1826, and Jefferson passed away the same day.

Major General John Thomas. General Thomas was born in the town of Marshfield, of direct descent from a Pilgrim ancestor, who came to New England a year after the Mayflower made her first voyage. He served with distinction through the French and Indian War until 1760, when he retired for a time at least from military calling.

The breaking out of the Revolution, during the wrangle of Putnam, Worcester, Pomeroy and Heath,

made it difficult for him to get his just desserts. Then followed an attempt to retain him, in spite of the apparent injury that had been done. This procedure was not matched in this or any other country, and through Washington's intercession it succeeded. He was retained and eventually the rank was given him that he should have had.

In the battle of Bunker Hill Thomas took no direct part. He was in Dorchester, and had Gage followed out his intentions of carrying the south of the town, he stood ready. He was in constant waiting and watching, while the town was being cannonaded.

It was General Thomas' men who took possession of Dorchester Heights. We have seen how he was saved from attack by a storm. John Thomas performed his duty with speed and success.

We next find General Thomas in command of the ill-fortuned expedition into Canada.

On June 2, 1776, he died at Chamblee of smallpox. This is a little singular, as he was an expert physician and had never taken the disease by inoculation or otherwise. He was 59 years old.

He was six feet in height, erect of carriage and of fine military bearing. His appearance was dignified and commanding. As a disciplinarian he was correct. Among the body of untrained countrymen assembled at Boston, he was foremost in bringing order out of chaos. He deserved all and more than he received. No portrait of him has been found.

John Thomas married Hannah Thomas of Plymouth, a woman of high intelligence. He left a daughter and two sons.

Benjamin Lincoln. A native of Hingham, and a warm personal friend of Thomas, he naturally succeeded him in the military field. We hear of him first as Major General of the Massachusetts Militia. He had pledged

himself to clear Boston Harbor of a fifty-gun ship and several smaller ships. This was June 13, 1776, and after a few shots the British Commodore concluded it would be safer for him to abandon Boston waters.

Washington formed an acquaintance with him at Cambridge, which induced him to recommend him as Major-General, to which office he was appointed in February, 1777. He hastened to join the Northern Army under Schuyler, because of his influence with the New England troops. He reached Bennington the day after Stark's victory. He entered upon the task of worrying Burgoyne's rear. He was active throughout the campaign, until he was severely wounded.

His reputation now stood so high that the delegation in Congress requested that he be placed in command of the southern army in December, 1778. So adroitly and skilfully did he handle the American army, he baffled for months the British and held them in check until in the year 1780. He was taken prisoner by a superior force and sent home on a parole. He was later exchanged and he joined the army under Washington on North River in 1781. He moved with the army to join Lafayette. He commanded the central division of the army at the siege of Yorktown. The duty of conducting the conquered army to the field where their arms were deposited, and receiving the customary submission, was assigned to him. He was soon after made Secretary of War, with the power to hold his rank in the army. At the end of three years, worn out by his long and arduous service, he resigned, when he retired to private life, highly honored by Congress and the public opinion of the citizens of the New Republic. Washington made him Collector of the Port of Boston, a position he held until about two years before his death. He was a member of the commission to deal with the Creek Indians.

He died in Hingham, May 9, 1810.

Major-General Henry Knox. One of the men who won distinction during the Revolution and the esteem of General Washington was Henry Knox. He was born in Boston, July 25, 1750. He began his career as a bookseller, but upon the breaking out of the Revolution he abandoned his business for the cause of his country. He served as a volunteer at the battle of Bunker Hill, showing great bravery. The American forces were sadly in need of artillery, and he went to Canada frontier to procure certain pieces of ordinance, which he accomplished successfully. He was intrusted with the command of the artillery department, with the rank of Brigadier-General. He was actively engaged throughout the conflict, usually near to Washington, until the end of the war. He fought heroically at Trenton, Princeton, Germantown and Monmouth. He was active in winning Yorktown. Congress made him a Major-General.

At the close of the war he was named one of the commissioners to arrange for the terms of peace. He was selected to receive the surrender of New York, and soon afterwards he was appointed to the command at West Point, where he was very successful in disbanding the troops, who were induced to accept quietly the character of peaceful citizens after the long and trying period in the army. In March, 1785, he was appointed by Congress to succeed General Lincoln as Secretary of War. He continued in this office until after the adoption of the Constitution of the United States. He next became active in establishing our navy, and our government owed him a debt for his careful assistance.

He then retired from public service in order to support his family. His wife had inherited a large tract of land in the District of Maine, and hither he repaired to reside. His popularity would not allow him to retire to private life. In 1798 he was appointed to command in the American army, when trouble seemed about to come

between this country and France. Peace finally came of this situation, and he was allowed to retire. He died at Thomaston, Maine, October 25, 1806, at the age of fifty-six years. General Knox deserved the most kindly consideration for his amiable and social qualities, both before the public and in his family. His integrity was beyond reproach and his courage and ability were above criticism.

The Men of Marblehead. The harshness of the British government in trying to get help from the colony found no more staunch "rebel" than "Cap'n John Glover" of Marblehead. Physically John Glover was a small man, but he had the courage of any of the big leaders. In fact, he was a leader in his town. Born in the same year as Washington, he early very boldly said what he had to say against British aggression, and no sooner had the news of Lexington and Concord reached him than he began to raise a regiment of men to be ready for the coming war. When he had four hundred and five men enlisted under him, he wrote to the Provincial Congress of what he had done and that he awaited their command. This Congress commissioned him as "Colonel commanding the Twenty-first Regiment of Foot, in the service of the Province of Massachusetts Bay."

The services of Colonel John Glover accepted, he was ordered to appear at Cambridge, where he could be assigned to regular work. Dressed in their new natty suits of "blue round jackets and trousers, trimmed with leather buttons," they presented a fine appearance, while its commander was said to be "the best dressed officer in the army at Cambridge." So this regiment of fishermen and sailors became popular at the outset. On account of previous experiences, these men were equally at home on land or sea, and served in both capacities.

If a fireship needed to be piloted or a cruiser driven from some hazardous port, or any perilous duty needed

to be done "Glover's Marblehead Men," as they were called, were certain to be called upon. Elbridge S. Brooks, in his admirable book upon Massachusetts, says most truthfully: "The forgotten heroes of a nation are as worthy of remembrance as those whose names are not allowed to die. John Thomas and Artemas Ward and General Heath, with Porter of Danvers, Putnam of Rutland, and Glover of Marblehead, and other Massachusetts soldiers, were as earnest in the defense of the Commonwealth and as able in the struggle for independence as those other Massachusetts soldiers, Generals Knox and Warren and Lincoln, whose names are imperishably associated with the Revolutionary story."

Forgotten Heroes. It was upon these forgotten heroes that Washington leaned in his darkest hours. It was General Artemas Ward who commanded the right wing of Washington's army and directed the work of fortifying Dorchester Heights. It was General Thomas who skillfully and completely stopped the British army by his engineering work on those same commanding heights of Dorchester. But these men are almost forgotten today. Then there is brave and energetic little John Glover, who became the ever ready helper of Washington.

When Washington sailed away from Boston, after the Red Coats had been driven out, taking with them so many Tories, Colonel Glover and his men from Marblehead went with him. Let me sketch them hastily in their future course.

When defeated on Long Island and almost wrecked, it was Glover's men from Marblehead who manned the boats through the fog and storm and ferried the shattered army safely across from Brooklyn to New York. So it was Massachusetts men who saved the army from destruction.

"When the panic-stricken Americans fled before the British invasion of Manhattan Island at Kips Bay and roused Washington to one of his infrequent outbreaks of temper, it was Glover's Marblehead regiment that hastened down from Harlem and turned back the flying troops and saved the army from panic and rout. It was Glover's regiment that in the enforced retreat from New York saved the ammunition and stores of the Continental army from capture and destruction. It was Glover's men who stopped the British advance at Throgs Neck, received Washington's personal and official thanks for their bravery at Dobbs Ferry, saved the baggage and stores from capture at White Plains, and twice routed the British assault at Chatterton Hill.

In that masterly retreat across New Jersey it was Glover's regiment that turned gloom into satisfaction, and it was again Glover's "Webfoots of Marblehead" which poled Washington's men through the swollen, iced river of the Delaware and made of that expedition one of the bright spots of history. It was Glover's brigade, for he was now a brigadier, which charged headlong into Trenton and cut off the retreat of the dazed Hessians.

Of the two bronzed figures that guard the entrance to the beautiful battle monument at Trenton is one of the heroes of Glover's men from Marblehead. "Every memory of the victory at Trenton is linked with the names of Knox and Glover, and the statue of this warrior-soldier from Marblehead is truly a most appropriate and fitting contribution from the great Commonwealth of Massachusetts to a shaft which for ages will commemorate a success unparalleled in our annals, a victory which made possible this great and powerful republic."

General Glover was with Schuyler at Saratoga, and his men bore a noble part in the results of that victory. He charged with the impetuous Arnold against the Hessians. He had three horses shot under him on that re-

markable day. It was Glover who frustrated Burgoyne in his attempt to retreat and thus saved his army. It was General Glover who conducted the captive General Burgoyne across the state to Boston from Saratoga to Cambridge, and imprisoned the captured army upon the hills of Somerville, winning from the defeated commander his thanks for the courteousness with which it was done.

This duty performed, General Glover was back to his beloved commander, doing his duty until the close of the war. He was one of the famous military court which tried and convicted the hapless Andre, who was concerned in Arnold's perfidy. So from the siege of Boston to the surrender of Cornwallis at Yorktown John Glover ever did his duty in a manner which won for him the highest of praise. He was but one selected at random to show us the spirit of the patriots who formed the beginning of the rebellion, as she was the backbone of the Revolution. "On land and at sea the sons of Massachusetts were foremost in the strife for liberty, carrying out the lessons they had learned from James Otis and Samuel Adams, John Hancock and John Adams, from Joseph Warren and Elbridge Gerry and from that patriot and philosopher, Benjamin Franklin, and others less famous but as determined and resolute patriots of the Old Bay colony, who lighted the way and led in the path of the Revolution to independence."

Molly Pitcher. Washington and some of his officers used to visit Molly Pitcher, a noted fortune teller living at Lynn. She predicted victory for the American army. She and her husband went with Washington's army. At Monmouth as she was carrying water to Proctor's men, her husband was killed while loading his cannon. He fell at her feet.

"Lie there, darling!" she cried, "while I avenge your death."

She took charge of the field piece in that bloody battle and so became the "Heroine of Monmouth." Upon the close of the war Washington commissioned her Sergeant, and placed her on half pay for life.

Samuel Adams, the Father of the Revolution. To Samuel Adams, more than to any other person, does Massachusetts owe the spirit of the Revolution carried into effect. Samuel Adams was born in Boston in 1722. As a boy he was ever arguing against oppression, tyranny. He was an American and a rebel. Why, at his graduation from college in 1740, when he was in his eighteenth year, he chose for his topic at the commencement exercise the dangerous subject, "Is it lawful to resist the supreme magistrate if the commonwealth cannot otherwise be preserved?"

His presentation of his subject was daring and eloquent, in the extreme. His friends turned pale, as they realized the perilous ground upon which he was treading. Still, he handled his topic so dexterously, and he framed his arguments so adroitly, that he was given his degree by the king-loving Governor Shirley, and he was allowed to go on his way sowing the seeds of patriotism, which meant to the British simply rebellion. He urged upon the different towns the importance of acting at their town meetings; he urged them to demand their rights of recognition; he drew up the remonstrance against taxation without representation; he urged the importance of unity in action, even to the extent of revolution. He did not accept British gold to curb his tongue. He was not intimidated by their rewards of arrest. If, as he said, James Otis was the author of Independence, he was its father. Three buildings in Boston deserve especial mention. These are the old State House, Faneuil Hall, and the Old South Church, where Otis and Samuel Adams stirred the people with their bold thoughts and paved the way to liberty.

Sam Adams was the Massachusetts man who first proposed the Continental Congress, and that body of law-makers came into session in Philadelphia, and John Hancock, another Massachusetts man, was elected its first President. Hancock, you will remember, was one of the men Great Britain had set a price upon his head. Benjamin Harrison of Virginia, upon escorting Hancock to the President's chair, said very appropriately:

"Now Great Britain can see how much we care for her proscriptions."

In the second session of the Continental Congress John Adams of Massachusetts, a cousin of Sam Adams, nominated George Washington of Virginia as Commander-in-Chief of the American army. Not only did John Adams make a happy choice in his move, but he also united the North and South thus early in the cause.

An American Jean D'Arc. Not all of the bravery, courage, patriotism and sacrifice belonged to the men. There were as true and faithful women as there were men. Less is told of them, but they did their part equally as well. We have in mind the story of Deborah Sampson, the American Jean d'Arc. Do you mean to say, we hear some of you ask: "Did she fight as a man?" She did, my young friend, and performed her duty as gallantly as any soldier in the army.

Her great-grandmother was a grand-daughter of Captain Myles Standish, and of John and Priscilla Alden. She was also the great grand-daughter of William Bradford, the second Governor of Plymouth. Do you wonder if she was a good fighter?

With no close family ties and having an adventurous spirit, she made a suit from cloth she had woven, such as men wore. She told no one what she was doing, and in order not to be seen she went to Worcester, where she enlisted May 2, 1782. She was then twenty-two. She was sent to the front and into active duty, under the name of Robert Shurtleff.

Deborah was five feet and seven inches in height, had regular features, large hazel eyes, was not easily excited, and in her male attire was a handsome young man. She became a favorite, and was known as "Molly," or the "smocked-faced boy," on account of her "blooming complexion." She served with distinction and honor, without her sex becoming known until near the close of the war. Her story reads like romance.

Severely wounded, while acting as a scout, the doctor who attended her discovered her secret. He did not reprimand her, but sent her to Washington with some papers. She, who had never flinched in danger, now hesitated. But General Washington met her kindly, and when she went away he handed her a paper. This proved to be her discharge and money to pay her expenses home, with a few kind words of advice.

When Washington was President he sent for "Robert Shurtleff" to visit him at the Capitol, then in Philadelphia. During this visit a bill was passed by Congress granting Deborah a pension and lands as compensation for her services as a Revolutionary soldier.

When at last the war was over, she married an honest yeoman, Benjamin Gannett. She left children.

"The American flag floats above the grave of Deborah Sampson," in a little rustic graveyard, where she sleeps serenely through the years. The Brockton Chapter, D. A. R., each Memorial Day place flowers above her grave and then gather at her old home, where they hold their annual dinner.

Benjamin Franklin. Benjamin Franklin was born in Boston, the seventeenth child of poor parents. He worked in his older brother's printing office until he had trouble with him, when he ran away. He finally brought up in Philadelphia when he was seventeen years old. Hungry and unknown, he bought three loaves of bread. Tucking a loaf under each arm, he began to eat

from the third loaf while he walked down the street. He passed the house of his future wife, who looked out and saw him, smiling broadly at the sight he presented. Meeting a poor woman with children, he gave his bread to her.

He got a job in a printing office and went to board at the home of a Mrs. Read, who was the mother of the girl who had seen him walking down the street with his bread. He finally started a paper, but was so independent



BENJAMIN FRANKLIN

in what he said that some of his subscribers took offense. These called upon him to offer their protests. He invited them to a lunch and set before them sawdust pudding and water. He invited them to eat, while he began to help himself liberally. They refused to eat such diet, when he said: "I can eat it and I am inde-

pendent of any man's patronage." The result was that his subscription list grew at once. He soon made himself famous by the publication of his "Poor Richard's Almanac," which helped to make his fortune.

He went back to Boston to see his family, and his father and James urged him to remain. But he had come to like Philadelphia, and no doubt the favor of Mrs. Read's daughter helped him to decide to return. He was soon after married and he got a wife who was a genuine helpmeet to him through life.

Franklin was a student of human nature and he surprised the world by his articles on science. He sent his kite with steel points into a thunder-cloud and brought down the electricity. He invented the lightning rod.

He rose through one triumph after another, until he became a person of national importance. He was Post-

master-General and did much in establishing our postal system. He was Governor of Pennsylvania. He went to England to discuss the Stamp Act and gained the respect and confidence of the British by his fair yet firm attitude. He was appointed delegate to the Constitutional Congress and served as one of the composers and signers of the Declaration of Independence.

He was a tower of strength and ability in behalf of the cause of the colonists during the Revolution. He was largely instrumental in securing the assistance of Lafayette and France during the war. Harvard and Yale Colleges bestowed upon him the degrees of Master of Arts. He was one of the leading men of his day.

The Hard Times That Followed War. Hard times usually follow war. During the years of strife business is neglected, and when peace returns it is difficult to begin again. It takes only a very short time to demoralize business. One year often puts affairs out of line. So seven years must break up any well-formed trade. At the close of the Revolution, everyone found himself deeply in debt and no regular business with which to begin again. It was so all over the country. It was true in New England—in Massachusetts. Money had been so reduced in its purchasing power that it had very little real value.

The defeat of the British at Boston ended the war in New England, but it did not stop the efforts of New England to carry on the struggle. So we find more men in the colonial army under Washington from Massachusetts alone than fought for independence south of the Potomac River. One good result came from the efforts of Massachusetts, with the other New England states, and that was an attempt to make the government at Washington better and stronger. It was fortunate that two strong men stood at the head of the new government. These men were Washington and Hamilton. In September, 1787, the constitutional convention met in Philadel-

phia and after prolonged discussion the Constitution of the United States was given to the people to ratify. This required a two-thirds vote of two thirds of the states in order to become the law. In New England, Connecticut, which had come out of the Revolution in better shape than the rest, easily voted for the new Constitution. Then it came to Massachusetts, the second largest state in the Union, and here the battle became bitter. Those who had upheld the Shay Rebellion did all they could to check the movement. So, finally when it came to be voted upon it passed by the slender majority of nineteen. This was followed by New Hampshire, where it again triumphed, and the Constitution was now adopted by nine of the thirteen states, and it became the law of the land.

Massachusetts voted for Washington at both of his elections, and solidly supported John Adams at both of the following elections. Massachusetts was strongly a Federalist state, and felt very much the election of Jefferson in 1800. But affairs turned out so well that Massachusetts voted for him at his second election. Her great interest was in her ships, and as Jefferson's treatment with the foreign powers injured this, so she suffered very much. So much, in fact, that there was open talk of secession in New England. This crisis ended in the famous Hartford Convention, in 1814, but fortunately the more violent members of this body did not control it, so out of it came no real harm.

In the midst of this the War of 1812 was declared. This war was opposed by Massachusetts. It was believed that her shipping interests must suffer. Still, with the rest of New England, Massachusetts did her part in the war, especially at sea, as witness the chapter of the Story of the Sea. The chief glory of this war was in its splendid victories on the water. Massachusetts also gave her hearty support at Lundy's Lane and Chippewa under Scott.

Old Disputes Settled. Fortunately this war settled many an old political quarrel. Party feeling vanished, and for some time little political feeling existed. The Federalist party disappeared. People were turning their attention to new enterprises. No longer could Massachusetts depend upon her ships to earn her a living. In this stress the attention of her inhabitants turned upon domestic industry. The protective tariff, supported by Calhoun and the South in 1816, helped Massachusetts.

Then it was that the drummer boy of Lexington, returning to his anxious mother after seven years in the army, was asked if he must leave her again, replied:

"No, dearest of mothers, I am here to stay now. The proud Briton has been humbled; the Red Coats have been driven from our shores, and AMERICA IS FREE!"

CHAPTER X

THE STORY OF THE SEA

The Romance of the Revolution. We have told you the story of how America won her independence. We have pictured to you the dawning of intelligence and awakening of the dream of freedom. We have told you the heroism of Concord and Lexington. We have described to you the glory of Bunker Hill. We have told you of Washington, the Father of America. We have not forgotten Long Island Sound, nor the horrors of Valley Forge, the victory at Trenton, the valor of Princeton and the decisive battle of Saratoga. Bennington and Yorktown, Stark, Schuyler, Putnam and Prescott, all New England men, have not been omitted. All of these deserve all that has been said. We would not pluck a single leaf from their laurels. Yet, leaving this as it has been told, the story is not complete until we have woven into that garland the glory of the sea. We now come to the Romance of the Revolution.

The Lexington of the Sea. Six years before the British marched by land upon Lexington, one of the first, if not the first, opposition to the British took place on the sea. The English war sloop in crossing the Atlantic in the spring of 1769 sighted the brig Pitt Packett fitted out from the port of Boston. According to the custom of the British marines, the war ship Rose demanded that certain ones of the crew of the Packett should be allowed to join the force of the British vessel.

"By what right?" thundered Captain Powers. "We have no men to spare."

"In the King's name we shall board your ship," answered the Englishman. "If you surrender peacefully no blood will be shed."

"In God's name I deny your right to do it. We will fight you to the bitter end."

Without further parley the British ship, in overwhelming numbers, swung across the bow of the Packett and her crew swarmed upon the smaller vessel's deck. Captain Powers had armed his men with such weapons and instruments as he could find and pluckily resisted the attack of the foe.

For three hours this unequal battle raged. Sturdy Michael Corbett threw a harpoon which struck the Mate of the Rose and he fell dead. Several of the crew of the British ship were wounded, but numbers finally counted against the brave patriots. They were defeated, but had the honor of knowing they had made a gallant resistance, the first, as far as we know, against the British oppression.

Corbett's Vindication. This early struggle occurred off Cape Ann, and Corbett was taken into Boston, where he was tried for murder. The signs of the times were evident in the report of the jury, which vindicated the prisoner. This battle and trial caused great excitement at the time, and nerved the men of Sam Adams' type to press the cause of liberty more vigorously than ever. Most of the historians, however, have ignored it. But it was an augury of the day, the forerunner of strife.

Manly of Marblehead. Maine had two experiences following this resistance of Pitt Packett. We refer to the capture of the schooner Margaretta, by the farmers of Machias, and the burning of Falmouth, now Portland, Maine, in retaliation for the conduct of Paul Jones. Though they aroused the martial spirit of the day, neither led to the scene which was to follow. Knowing the shortness of provisions and the well filled chests of the British, John Manly of Marblehead wrote to Washington, recently appointed Commander-in-Chief of the American army, asking permission to arm a vessel and

put to sea to harass the foe and capture, if possible, vessels laden with provisions.

Glover to the Rescue. This letter from Manly was sent to Congress, but the action of that body was too slow to suit the impatient Washington. His army was short of provisions. To be effective, quick action must take place. He had the authority, so he immediately wrote in August to Colonel John Glover, of Boston, to hire vessels and fit them out as cruisers.'



SHIP AT SEA

Within two weeks, September 5th, the schooner Hannah was placed under the command of Captain Nicholson Broughton, manned by a detachment of the army, and sailed away on the first cruise of the Americans against their enemies. This was the first cruise of any American ship against the British, as Colonel John Glover was the Father of the American Navy, for this was the real beginning.

The Hannah soon showed that she was worthy of her guns and Broughton was worthy of being her com-

mander. The first afternoon she ran the gauntlet of two British ships of war, many of which were lying off the coast. Two days later she fell in with the British ship *Unity*, laden with provisions and ammunition. This vessel she captured and Hannah proudly made her way into port. We think she was the first to earn her title.

Glover's Navy. October 3, Colonel Glover proved his industry by having four vessels armed and ready to sail on their mission of war. These vessels were hired and fitted out on account of the United Colonies of America. Colonel Glover kept a record of the transaction under the heading of "Ye navy." The expense of the fleet was paid by him, who was reimbursed by a warrant issued by General Washington.

The First Navy. The first ship fitted out at this time was *The Lynch*, so called in honor of the South Carolina signer of the Declaration of American Independence, who had been drowned at sea. She was commanded by Captain Nicholson Broughton, who had first been at the head of the *Hannah*. The others were the *Franklin*, under Captain Samuel Selmand; the *Lee*, under Captain John Manly; *The Warren*, commanded by Captain William Adams, a New Hampshire man, whose crew had been taken from the troops of his state.

Well did this little fleet deserve the confidence of its Commander-in-Chief. The *Lynch* and *Franklin* went in pursuit of a British transport bound for Quebec, then lying at the mouth of the St. Lawrence. This prize escaped them, but within two weeks they had captured and sent in ten other prizes, some of them well loaded.

Manly's Prize. Of greater importance than any of the adventures mentioned was the capture of the British brig *Nancy* bound for Boston with military stores. Of 250 tons burden, her cargo consisted of a thirteen-inch brass mortar, several brass field pieces, two thousand stands of arms, one hundred thousand flints, thirty-two tons

of lead, a great amount of ammunition, together with a complete assortment of tools, utensils, and machines needed in military operations.

This prize was of great value to General Washington, who was feeling the need of just such additions to his store. All of this was at once sent to the army at Cambridge.

Captain Manly's exploits did not stop with this. Sighting, soon after, two British transport vessels, he resolved to attempt their capture, though they were protected by a British fleet in Boston harbor. By dint of shrewd maneuvering and skillful handling of his ship, he succeeded in getting both of the sloops away from their protectors and finally came proudly into the harbor at Marblehead with his trophies. Only once have we found where he met more than his match. This was his attack upon the sloop-of-war Falcon. Finding he had been caught by a vessel too large for him to overcome, he managed to keep out of the enemy's reach until night-fall, when, fortunately, a furious storm set in, and he got away. Honor to Captain Manly!

Captain Mugford's Exploit. If the men just named were brave, Captain Mugford was a hero. During the year 1775 Captain Mugford, a young man from Marblehead, had been impressed into the British service. Before the English war-ship had left the harbor, the wife of Captain Mugford went on board the ship and begged to see the commander. Upon being taken into his presence, she made such an earnest plea for her husband, saying they were just married and that she was in needy circumstances, that the captain, who did not prove as hard-hearted as many of them, consented to allow him his freedom.

While on board the ship Captain Mugford had learned of a piece of news he believed would turn to his good. He lost no time in going to the proper authorities and

telling them that if he would be allowed to command a suitable vessel he would agree to capture a valuable British transport laden with powder. Now, there was need of powder, and he was given authority and funds to fit out his ship. The Franklin was then returned from her cruise, and he was given command.

Captain Mugford collected his crew with care, and on May 17, 1776, he discovered the sail of the ship he was looking for. She was a transport of three hundred tons and carried six guns. Her crew was only seventeen men. The worst of the situation was the fact that a British fleet lay at anchor in the Nantasket Roads, in full sight.

Despite this fact, and as soon as he started in pursuit of the Hope, the British transport, boats were sent out to cut off his attack from the squadron. It was lively times for half an hour. Reaching the Hope, Captain Mugford and his men boarded the Briton, and swiftly overpowered her crew.

Seeing the hopelessness of his situation, the captain of the Hope ordered some of his crew to cut away the top-sail halyard ties, so the speed of the vessel would be so curtailed she could not hope to escape the pursuing boats.

"Dare to move and every man of you dies!" cried Captain Mugford.

A man six feet in height and broad-shouldered, with flashing eyes, the crew dared not disobey the order of their commander. So the Hope, under charge of her new masters, fled away and escaped from the British boats.

This valuable prize, whose cargo consisted of one thousand carbines with bayonets, twenty carriages for field pieces, sixteen hundred barrels of powder, with a complete assortment of artillery implements and pioneer tools, was taken through Pudding Point Gut. This channel, little known at that time, and outside of the fire of the fleet, Captain Mugford arrived safely in Boston harbor.

Upon arriving in Boston with their valuable prize, Captain Mugford and his brave crew were the heroes of the day. Theirs was the most valuable store which was brought into Boston port during the war.

Fate of Captain Mugford. The bravery of Captain Mugford could not save him at the last. In passing through Pudding Point Gut his vessel grounded. The British, seeing his plight, sent fourteen boats manned by two hundred men, to capture the brave Yankee. Shot down as soon as they got within gun-range, the British met a terrible fate. Finally, in trying to board the Franklin, the combat became hand-to-hand. The heroic Mugford was shot in the breast by one of the boarders. Calling to his lieutenant, he said:

"I am a dead man; don't give up the ship; you will be able to beat them off."

He expired before this was done, but before the end of half an hour they had won a victory.

The tide rising soon, the Franklin floated from the soft ground, and a favorable breeze took them into Marblehead harbor. Their only loss was the brave captain, while the enemy lost seventy.

Captain Harraden. Did you ever read a novel that had more of romance in it than this Story of the Sea? Captain Mugford's example of bravery was but one among many. Sometimes we wonder if they were never defeated. No matter what the odds, these born fighters, the privateers, nearly always came out ahead. Now we are going to tell you of another of these fighters of the sea. It is now Captain Jonathan Harraden of Salem. He fought off the coast of Bilboa an English privateer, the Achilles. He was in command of the General Pickering, a ship of one hundred and eighty tons. She carried fourteen six-pounders and was manned by forty-five men and boys, only a few of whom had ever been in battle. Her foe had one hundred forty men and car-

ried forty-two guns. The adversary this time was three times against them.

This fight was long and hazardous. Crowds of people on the shore witnessed the battle with amazement. Finally the British captain, thinking he was mastered, sought safety in flight. When the fight was over the brave American was caught upon the shoulders of the inhabitants of the city and borne with loud huzzas through the place.

One More for Harraden. Again Captain Harraden attacked a King's mail packet, when his vessel was so badly dismantled that it was felt she must sink. In this dilemma he ranged alongside of his enemy and poured all of his remaining shot in one furious broadside. The Englishman at last was compelled to surrender, when a scene of awful carnage presented itself.

Five Sailors. Captain John Stillwell was in command of the ship *St. Helena*. Cruising off Havana in November, 1782, his vessel was crippled through an accident, and later his ship was captured by the English brig *Lively*, Captain Michael Stanhope commander. The prisoners were conveyed to the ship *Lively*. Before many days it was found that the Americans were planning to take possession of the ship. In this case all were confined below and allowed to come up only one at a time.

Not many days later, as Nathan Walker was having his turn to go upon deck, he suddenly turned upon his escort and felled him to the deck. Then taking out the bar which confined four of his comrades in the hatchway, these rushed up, when a desperate fight succeeded. In a few minutes this five were in possession of the vessel.

Forty-one other Americans, the crew of the *St. Helena*, were freed and the captured ship was run into port.

Commodore Tucker. We have spoken of John Manly of Marblehead, who was distinguished as a commodore.

We now come to speak of Samuel Tucker, who was also a commodore. These men both had the courage and audacity, and did more dangerous deeds than Paul Jones thought of, and yet they died in obscurity. It has been truly said that Tucker "took more prizes, fought more fights, and gained more victories, than, with a very few exceptions, any naval hero of the age." Yet he died of sorrow over the thought that he was ignored by the government he had fought for and helped to establish.

The Thorn and Lord Hyde. The biographer of Tucker gives us this account of his meeting with the British packet of twenty-two guns and one hundred men. He was commander of the letter-of-marque Thorn, when he came upon the English brig Lord Hyde.

The usual salutations followed, and then the British commander demanded:

"Haul down your colors, or I will sink you."

"Ay, ay, sir, directly," replied Tucker, calmly, and then he ordered the helmsman to steer "the Thorn right under the stern of the packet, luff under her lee quarter, and range alongside."

This order was quickly obeyed, and within ten minutes the two vessels were laid side by side. Surprised at this action, the Hyde fired a broadside into the Thorn. This did not seem to do much damage, and the American commander shouted:

"Now fire!" and the discharge that succeeded carried its havoc of destruction and bloodshed. A fresh volley followed, and then the Englishman screamed:

"Quarter, for God's sake, or we die. Our ship is sinking."

"How can you expect quarter with that British flag flying?"

"Our halyards are shot away."

"Cut away your ensign mast, or you'll all be dead men."

This was quickly done and the firing ceased. Including the captain, thirty-four of the Hyde were killed or wounded, and the sight that greeted Captain Tucker's eyes as he stepped upon her deck brought from him the exclamation:

"Would to God I had never seen her."

This is but a sample of half a dozen adventures of Captain Tucker, but when the war was over he and his men seemed to have been forgotten.

Captain Tucker of Marblehead. It was early in the year 1776 a young man might have been seen riding at a smart clip into Marblehead. Anyone could see that he was excited and nervous. Finally discovering a man in everyday clothes, with an old battered tarpaulin on his gray head, at work in his garden, he reined up and called out:

"Here, sir, can you tell me where I can find the Honorable Samuel Tucker?"

Looking up with a quizzical expression on his sun-burned features, he drawled:

"Honorable, Honorable Samuel Tucker? You must be looking for one of the Salem Tuckers. I am the only Samuel Tucker in this town."

"I have been told I would find him at a lone house with its gable to the sea. This is the first house of the kind I have found."

"I've a notion I am the Tucker you want. But I don't hitch no 'honorable' to my name. What have you got to say?"

"If you're the man, which I don't believe, I've got a commission for you from General Washington. He orders you to take command of the armed schooner Franklin of Boston port."

"All right, young man. Jest walk in and we will talk it over."

Samuel Tucker was a true down-easter. He had begun as a boy on a British war-vessel, and when news of the rising of the colonies reached him he was in London. The British knew him and offered him a good position to fight for his "Gracious Majesty." Captain Tucker's anger rose.

"Fight for your 'Gracious Majesty'? Do ye think I am that kind of a man to fight against my country?"

Those were dangerous words then in London. Samuel Tucker was saved by a friend and he got back to his native land in safety. Now Washington wanted him to command the Franklin. Of course he accepted, on the 20th of January, 1776. He swept the seas around Boston, capturing and sending in no less than thirty prizes during that year. One of these was "a brigantine from Scotland worth fifteen thousand pounds."

To understand the value of these natives you must understand the need of the materials secured. They were often captured at great risk of life. It is related that on one occasion he was attacking two British war ships so close to Marblehead that his wife and daughter, hearing the firing, went out upon a hill to the rear of their house and witnessed the capture of the enemy through a spy glass.

A Perilous Errand. Captain Tucker was honored in March, 1777, by being placed in command of the frigate Boston, which did such valuable service that, in 1778, he was given the honor of conveying John Adams to France, as envoy from the United Colonies. He was to deliver his illustrious passenger safely in the French port, but, as may be well imagined, this was no slight duty.

After running the gauntlet of a furious storm, in which he nearly lost his vessel, he barely escaped by flight two British war-ships. He then ran upon a third ship, which he resolved to take a chance in attacking. No sooner had

the drum called his men to quarters than the battle excitement sent his passengers upon deck ready to join in the fight.

"Stop!" cried Captain Tucker. "I cannot allow that. You must go below."

But, as may be imagined, John Adams was one to give rather than take orders, so he seized a musket and was about to join them when Captain Tucker said:

"Mr. Adams, you must not join in this struggle. I cannot permit it. You must go below."

Mr. Adams did not show any signs of obeying, so Captain Tucker took him firmly by the shoulder, saying decidedly:

"Mr. Adams, my orders are to take you safely to France, and, by the Eternal One, I am going to do it. You must go below."

The passenger saw that he was in earnest, and he obeyed this time.

The British ship now opened fire, but the Boston remained silent. In fact, she remained silent so long that the old tars began to grumble.

"Don't get uneasy, boys," he said, in his quizzical way. "I want to get that egg without breaking the shell."

So carefully and skillfully did he manage the Boston that he brought her into a position where he could rake the enemy from stem to stern. One broadside was sufficient to make the foe pull her flag down. So the egg was taken without breaking the shell. John Adams was landed safely in France.

So fast and furious did Captain Tucker range the sea that he seemed everywhere and invincible. The British feared him and ships were sent out to capture him. On one occasion as Tucker was cruising along he ran across a British frigate somewhat larger than his vessel, the Boston. In a trice, up went the British flag, while he sailed calmly into the vicinity of the Englishman.

"Ahoy, there!" thundered the British officer. "Have you seen the rebel Tucker? I am out to get him."

"Well, here's to your luck. But look out he don't get you. He's a slippery one."

Captain Tucker all the while was handling his ship so by this time he had brought her into a raking position. Just then the British lookout shouted:

"Beware there, on deck. That is Tucker himself."

"Ay, ay, sir," retorted the hero. "Here is Tucker; come and get him."

The British commander saw at once the box he was in. Before the American could discharge his first gun, he ran up the flag of distress and surrendered without firing a gun.

This is an incomplete list of his work. After the war Congress gave special thanks to Captain Tucker, and for some years he was convoying packets across the Atlantic.

Settling down in Maine as a farmer, he performed one more act we must not omit. A British privateer, the *Crown*, was harassing the Maine coast. Though now sixty-six and supposed to be a farmer, he rallied and, in command of a vessel, he went out to capture the enemy. As usual he was successful. He died in 1833, in his 86th year, loved and honored far and wide.

The Essex. We now come to speak of the romantic Essex. You must understand that near the close of the 18th century, American shipping was very much disturbed by "French insolence and piracy." We have spoken of the trouble with the Moors and along the Mediterranean coast. Besides these there were ominous mutterings of the War of 1812. Let all this be as it may, in 1799 the patriotic citizens of Salem built by subscription a ship known as *The Essex*. The avowed purpose of this vessel was "to chastise the enemy."

The Essex sailed for the Indian Ocean in December, 1799, under the command of Captain Edward Preble.

So the Essex was the first United States vessel to double the Cape of Good Hope. Thirteen years later she was the first of our naval ships to sail around Cape Horn, and a stormy voyage the ship had.

From 1802 to 1805 the Essex was an active part in operations against the Barbary Powers. During this career she was under Captains Barron, Bainbridge, Decatur and Stewart. In 1811 she was in Commodore Rodger's squadron on our own coast.

Essex Under Porter. On July 2, 1812, Porter set sail on a cruise whose fruits would be nine prizes and over five hundred prisoners. So the run of good luck went on and on, until at last the tide turned. This was destined to be the close of one of the most spectacular voyages ever recorded in the annals of the navy.

The Essex was accompanied by the Essex Junior, and the two vessels reached Valparaiso early in February. While off here two British ships were sighted, the Phoebe and the Cherub, commanded by Captain James Hillyar. It so happened that the Essex had given a ball for the benefit of the citizens on shore, and half of the Essex's crew were off on leave of absence. A recall was sounded and preparations made at once for a battle with the foe. These rivals had met before and both knew his rival's courage.

Nothing came of this first meeting, but the Phoebe held watch over the American ship for six weeks. The British commander had promised not to break the blockade, but the sight of other English war-ships made Porter suspicious that trouble was ahead for him. He tried to escape, and the Essex Junior did get separated. The weather was against him, his ship disabled, and the Phoebe, with her long range guns in great advantage over the cannonade of the Essex. The fire of the enemy was terrible. Porter tried in vain to close with his adversary. He tried to run in ashore and burn his vessel, but everything seemed against him.

The fire from the Phoebe was fearful. Captain Hilliard knew if he kept his foe at arm's length, she must soon surrender. Now the Essex caught on fire. A quantity of powder exploded. The slaughter was too terrible to name. Of the two hundred and fifty-five men aboard the Essex, fifty-eight had been killed, sixty-six wounded, thirty-one drowned, while twenty-four had succeeded in reaching shore. This left only seventy-six men, and the Essex surrendered at 6:20, after one of the closest contested battles recorded in naval history.

Old Ironsides. The Battle of Yorktown had been fought and American freedom won. During the interval of peace between that war and the War of 1812, the frigate Constitution, since lovingly named "Old Ironsides," was built in the Boston Shipyard. The bolts which held her timbers were cast in the Paul Revere foundry. The flag she bore was made by Betsy Ross, the Mother of the Star Spangled Banner. She was launched from Hartt's shipyard in 1797.

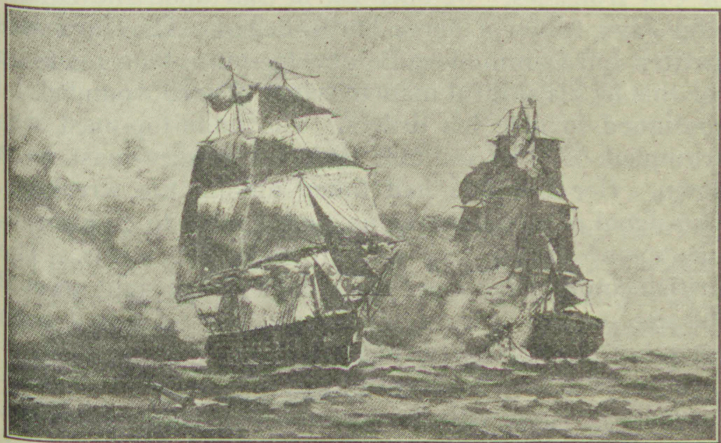
Her story has in it the soul of patriotism. Her deeds rankle with romance. Her achievements sound vain-glorious. Her first commander was Captain Samuel Nicholson, and her maiden voyage was to the West Indies.

In 1803 Edward Preble was appointed Commodore of the Mediterranean squadron, and the Constitution was his flag-ship. She was the ship of honor in that memorable siege, and bore herself with becoming dignity. The object and the result of this campaign was to humble the Moors. Commodore Preble was honored by Congress for his brave and skillful action and voted a gold medal.

Captain Hull. The second war with Great Britain had been declared. This was known as the War of 1812. As if one drubbing was not sufficient! In this struggle the better part of the strife was fought on the sea. England had boasted she was Mistress of the Ocean. She

awoke from that bright dream, which had proved a nightmare. No one ship did more to break this illusion than Old Ironsides.

This time she was commanded by Captain Isaac Hull, a Connecticut man. On August 2, 1812, he sailed proudly out of Boston harbor, heading due east. She soon sighted the British cruiser the *Guerriere*, and the first great naval battle of the war followed. Captain Hull managed his



BETWEEN THE CONSTITUTION AND HER ENEMY

ship grandly. It was a spirited fight. It soon became evident Old Ironsides would win. She hauled slightly ahead, damaged by her enemy's fire, repaired her masts, rove new rigging and then took a favorable position for sending a raking volley against the *Guerriere*. Then the jack, which had been kept flying on the mizzen-mast, was lowered. Captain Dacres had surrendered.

It was soon found that the *Guerriere* was sinking. The prisoners were removed. The vessel was cleared as far as could be. A fire was set. This soon reached the powder magazine, and the unfortunate vessel was blown to

fragments. Five minutes later and nothing was seen of the proud ship, which a little before had made such a stubborn fight.

Captain Hull entered Boston harbor, draped in flowing bunting. Ay, there was wild rejoicing awaiting the Constitution. She had won the first great naval victory of the war.

Captain William Bainbridge was the next commander of Old Ironsides. October 29, he ran upon the British ship Java, when a fierce battle began. The Java was swifter, but Commodore Bainbridge more than made up for this by his skillful maneuvering. Twice wounded, he continued to give his orders. The main-top-mast was crumpled. A few minutes later her mizzen-mast went down. Her last flag had fallen among the wreckage. The signal of surrender came, and, unable to go himself, Lieutenant Parker was sent to make the terms. The British commander was dying, and a pitiful sight greeted the eye on the deck of the Java. The odds had been even, but Captain Bainbridge had won by sheer skill.

So, after a four months' cruise, Old Ironsides had returned to Boston with the triumph of another great victory. Her gallant commander was voted a gold medal, and now the noble Constitution was re-christened "Old Ironsides."

For the third time Old Ironsides was re-fitted and manned and sent forth for fresh glory. Her commander this time was Captain Charles Stewart, and, single-handed, under the matchless handling of her skilled commander, she outwitted and outmatched two British war-ships, the Cyane and Levant, and returned again to Boston for new laurels. She was surprised to find, as Jackson found at New Orleans, that the treaty of peace had been signed, and the war was over.

The time came when Old Ironsides, with her honor and her usefulness, was at an end. But she should not

be allowed to rot in the dock. Public sentiment was in favor of saving her rugged form for preservation. In her picturesque career she captured three frigates and a sloop of war. Seven times she had run blockades. Twice had she made remarkable escapes from squadrons. She had never lost over twelve men in one engagement. She had never betrayed her master. She found a country divided, restless and uneasy; she helped to make it a powerful nation. No vessel in our navy has a more wonderful history.

“Tear not that tattered ensign down;
Long has it waved on high,
And many an eye has danced to see
That banner in the sky.”

A Tribute. In conclusion, let us quote from Mr. Samuel Rhoads, to whose researches we are greatly indebted: “The hardy seamen who manned the private armed ships of the Revolution were animated by as lofty motives of patriotism as any of the men who served in the regular navy, or who fought the battles of the country on the land. Their devotion to the glorious cause of independence was sealed by the blood they shed and the lives they gave in its defense. By the broken hearts of the widows and orphans who mourned them, they made a sacrificial offering on the altar of liberty.

“Let us weave for them the choicest garlands of the flowers of memory. Let us cut their names high in the temple of fame. Let the story of their prowess be told by Americans to their children and their children’s children throughout all generations.”

CHAPTER XI

THE CONQUEST OF COMMERCE AND RAILROADS

We have told you the fighting story of the sea. Now we want to tell you the peaceful conquest of commerce. As early as 1748 five hundred vessels are said to have cleared the port of Boston in a single year. Four hundred and thirty are said to have entered its port. And there were no coasting vessels in those days. Boston led New York and Philadelphia as a shipping port.

Boston and London. The first connection of Boston with the port of London was as early as 1630. In 1629 William Peirce, in command of the "Mayflower," a new ship by that name, plied his craft between New England and the River Thames. In those days it was not the rule to make a direct voyage across the Atlantic, but to go by the way of Virginia. Notice that Winthrop said: "Mr. Peirce went down to his ship, which lay at Nantasket. He went into England by Virginia, and they were six weeks going to Virginia."

This was November 23, 1631, and in 1638 fourteen vessels were in the Thames loading for Boston. At this time Captain Peirce was at the head of a ship built at Marblehead and called the "Desire." He was one of the pioneer captains in the transatlantic trade. In December, 1643, five ships were on the way to London, loaded with beaver, and carrying passengers crossing the Atlantic for England. During this period fleets of mast ships began their voyages. Judge Sewall mentions these ships for a period of fifty years. Frequent mention is made of these voyages to and from London; the captains most often mentioned were Foye, Bant, Fairweather and

Harris, while in more recent years we find Mason and Sears. The voyages of these ships were usually accompanied by the prayers of the ministers.

Liverpool did not come into competition with London for more than a hundred years. In fact, this place had a population of barely five thousand at the close of the seventeenth century. The cargoes from this place were more bulky and heavier than the finer commodities which came from London. Two favorite vessels plying between Boston and London just before the Revolution were the Boston Packet, Captain John Marshall, and the London Packet, Captain Egbert Calef in command.

Early in the 19th century, in order to regulate the shipping between Boston and London and Liverpool, as well as to look after the interest of importers, the Boston Importing Company was organized in 1803. This organization seemed to have aided materially the shipping interest and not only business picked up but the number of passengers increased.

A war between France and Great Britain greatly interfered with American commerce on account of the trouble given her ships upon the seas. No American vessel was safe from being taken by either the French or the English, and too often destroyed. The annoyance, loss and disaster to American commerce was heavy during this period. In spite of this disadvantage, commerce not only held its own but increased from year to year. The company mentioned seemed to have abandoned business just before the War of 1812.

This war quite closed the foreign trade until its end, and in the winter of 1821 and 1822 The Boston and Liverpool Packet Company was instituted, with a capital stock of one hundred thousand dollars. The object of this association was "to secure by the regular and punctual departure from both ports of these packet ships the more frequent supplies of goods and the convenience of

passengers." It was expected that the importers would subscribe and hold a controlling interest in the corporation. It was planned to build and equip four vessels, "to be finished and furnished in excellent style." The cost was not to exceed \$85,000 for the four and they were to be manned and commanded by experienced men.

The new company, as the earlier organizations had done, applied to the Legislature for incorporation, but this was denied them. On October 15, 1822, "The Emerald" and the "Herald" were advertised to leave India Wharf for Liverpool. The master of the first-named was Philip Fox, and Hector Coffin was to be master of the second. It was further announced: "The above ships, with two others now building, will positively leave on the days stated, if the weather permits." Of the vessels mentioned the Topaz was built that year by Thatcher Magoun at Medford, and the Amethyst was probably the other, while the Sapphire built this year was run in connection with the others. This line was the first to name its ships on a definite plan, but it proved successful. One of the vessels, the Topaz, on her way from Calcutta to Boston in 1830, was attacked by pirates off St. Helena and all of her crew killed. It is related that the Emerald in her prime, under the command of Captain Jabez Howes, sailed from Boston to Liverpool and returned in thirty-two days.

This line of Liverpool packets did not seem to meet with a great amount of success. New York had now regular lines running between that city and England, so Boston felt the necessity of trying again, and in 1827, the third line was established. Again the Legislature declined to give the new company articles of incorporation, but it went ahead under articles of association. October 3, 1827, a list of ships was advertised and the first was to sail soon. The passengers were to be furnished "with mattresses, bedding, wines, and all other stores in the

cabin." The fare for them was to be \$140.00, and from Liverpool to London, thirty-five guineas more. The *Amethyst* sailed on November 1, 1827, under command of Jabez Howes, with a full freight and forty-two passengers, two first-class, the forty in the steerage.

In 1828 this company had ready for sailing the *Boston* and the *Trenton*. In 1832 the *Lowell*, and in 1833, the *Plymouth*. These were all of four hundred and thirty tons government measure. The first of these ships, the *Boston*, "one of the finest packets that belonged to this country," was struck by lightning just out from Charlestown in 1830 and was burned. Sir Isaac Coffin, who afterwards rose to be a British Admiral, was a passenger.

Steamships. A revolution to change the mode of ocean trade was in sight. In 1825 a company was formed in London to open communication between Europe and America by means of steam ships. The daring of this venture is shown by the fact that only one vessel had crossed the Atlantic under steam. That was the *Savannah* in 1819, and it was done as much under sail as under steam.

Samuel Cunard of Halifax was among the first to give this kind of navigation of the Atlantic serious thought. It does not appear that he had any interest in the movement in London, but he had been connected with a line of mail-ships running between Halifax and Falmouth, England, and he could foresee the ultimate outcome of such a service in the interest of speed and safety. Ocean transit by steam was proved beyond doubt in the summer of 1838, when the *Great Western* and the *Sirius* made their noted voyages from the Severn and the Thames, which vanished beyond argument the doubt of steam navigation. Twelve packet ships were then overdue at New York.

The arrival of the *Great Western* and the *Sirius* in London was a date to be long remembered in England.

The Lords of Admiralty, who had charge of ocean mails, saw that the time for a radical change had come. So they began at once to carry into effect plans for the future transit of the mail by steam from Liverpool to Halifax and Boston.

The Cunard Steamers. Mr. Cunard was in England at this time and saw that the time for action had come or he would be too late. He sought Robert Napier, a celebrated engineer on the Clyde, and by him was introduced to George Burns and David MacIver, of the firm of Burns and MacIver, who owned a line of steamers plying successfully between Liverpool and Glasgow. All of the details as to the size of the ships, power, construction and probable running cost were carefully considered by the able gentlemen, and then the aid of capitalists was called upon to help carry forward the movement. So the British and North American Royal Mail Steam Packet Company came into existence. In behalf of this company Mr. Cunard made an offer to carry the mails across the Atlantic, which was finally accepted. The particulars were given in a letter by Mr. Cunard to a firm in Boston, the letter dated at London, March 22, 1839.

Upon the receipt of this letter the business men of Boston immediately insisted that Boston should be made the objective point of the line rather than Halifax, as stated in the original agreement, Boston to be made a branch line.

Mr. Cunard was about to start for America when he received this reply, and he went back to place it before the board, offering greater inducements by building greater ships and asking for an increase in the subsidy. He was successful, and then he went to Glasgow, where the keel for four steamers had already been laid. These were broken up and four steamers of about twelve hundred tons each were begun in four different yards. These

steamships were named the *Britannia*, the *Acadia*, the *Caledonia* and the *Columbia*.

First Steamships. The *Unicorn*, a steamer built for this line, came into Boston via Halifax June 2, 1840, and was the pioneer. On the 18th of July, 1840, the *Britannia* reached Boston via Halifax in fourteen and one-half days from London.

For seven and a half years Boston enjoyed the monopoly of the Cunard Steamship Company. During this period it was the Atlantic port for the trade of Upper and Lower Canada. The noted men of Great Britain and Europe came here, giving this port a distinguished appearance and adding greatly to its prestige and business. It was during this period that Charles Dickens, the noted English novelist, arrived in January, 1842, the wintry voyage being the subject of his fanciful description.

In the early days of steam navigation, frequently the passengers offered testimonials to the credit of the captain in case the voyage was hindered by any means. The mid-winter trip of the *Brittania* in 1842 had been especially stormy and the passage into Halifax Harbor, where she encountered deadly peril, was made with difficulty. On this occasion Dickens was chosen the secretary to draw up the resolutions of sympathy and thankfulness to the captain for his courage and faithfulness in doing his duty. "He never went to bed nor was ever out of humor," said the scribe.

In the summer of 1843 the Cunard steamer was wrecked in the Bay of Fundy, and all of the passengers were saved.

The winter of 1844-5 was excessively cold, so Boston Harbor was frozen over. The steamer *Britannia* was daily expected and the people became anxious over the fact that the mail would be delayed and a bad reputation given their harbor. Only swift giving of funds and rapid work in cutting up the ice saved the mail and the reputation of the port.

Train's Liverpool Packets. In the summer of 1844 Enoch Train, who had been in the leather trade, started his celebrated line of Liverpool sailing packets. The first ships advertised by the new firm were the *Dorchester*, 500 tons; the *Cario*, 600 tons; the *Governor Davis*, 800 tons; and the *St. Petersburg*, 800 tons. All of these were "first-class, Medford built, coppered, and fast sailing ships." The first of these, the *Dorchester*, under Captain Caldwell, had sailed for Liverpool May 17, 1844.

The first ship built for this line was the *Joshua Bates*. This was followed in rapid succession by the *Anglo-American*, the *Anglo-Saxon*, the *Washington Irving*, the *Ocean Monarch*, the *Daniel Webster*, the *Star of Empire*, and the *Chariot of Fame*, and others. These were all beautiful vessels, and some of them were large and became famous in their day.

Donald McKay. Before Mr. Train had come to the front of ship-launching most of the vessels had been built at the Medford yard by Mr. Thatcher Magoun and James O. Curtis. Now the scene of action was transferred to East Boston and the leading genius was Donald McKay.

In September, 1851, Boston was alive with excitement and display over the completion of the railroad lines to the Canadas and the Northern Lakes, and in the opening of the Grand Junction Railroad, which connected these lines with the steamship wharves at East Boston. The opportunities offered here were not equaled by those of any other port. This fact was an encouragement for the citizens to recommend to public favor the organization of the Ocean Steamship Company of New England. This company proposed to build four steamers to be named after prominent Boston merchants.

On September 17, 1851, a propeller built in Philadelphia of 1,104 tons register, arrived in Boston, after a run of forty-seven hours from Delaware breakwater. This was the *S. S. Lewis*, and on account of the high recom-

mendations given of her she started for Liverpool October 4, with forty-five cabin and twenty steerage passengers. The projectors of the enterprise, Harnden & Company, the founders of the express in this country, failed that fall, so the undertaking was not followed up.

Boston and European Steamship Company. In the spring of 1855, the Legislature of Massachusetts incorporated Donald McKay, George B. Upton, Enoch Train, Andrew T. Hall, and James M. Bebee, under the name of the Boston and European Steamship Company, with a capital of \$500,000, "for the purpose of navigating the ocean by steam." The plan was to build a line of Atlantic steamers to rival anything New York had put out. The Cunard steamers had been drawn into the Crimean War, through purchase by the British government, while it was rumored that the Boston steamers were to be taken over by the same powers. A public meeting was held on the Exchange on July 12, in the interest of the plan in mind. This meeting was largely attended and stirring speeches were made in favor of the new project. Mr. Train, at the head of sailing ship trade, was among those who spoke in favor of it, saying he did not think it would hurt his business. Even at that date the wooden paddle wheel still held its own in the minds of steamship men. This plan seemed to have ended with this meeting.

Other attempts were made to organize steamship lines between Boston and Great Britain without avail. All of these related to steamers, but as a matter of fact, from the close of the War of 1812 to the Civil War, Boston steadily grew not only in population but in its commercial and financial strength. Boston ships penetrated to far-away ports. It reached its highest and best in the shipping lines in those days of the Boston-built clipper ships, which originated and were constructed by Donald McKay in his East Boston yards. From 1840 to 1855 the Boston clipper ship was supreme upon the seas. Ameri-

can shipping stood at its highest then. Boston firms were building ships for New York and English concerns. Some of the records made by these sailing ships have never been equalled until steam came into opposition. The Civil War seriously interfered with the situation in Boston.

Boston Record. The close of the war in 1865 saw Boston alive to the situation, and it is doubtful if another record can be found to match the advance made here in the years that followed. When the projectors of the American Steamship Company in 1865 declared there was business enough if only sufficient preparation could be made to meet it. The results show this to have been true. From now on, in 1869, steamships to Europe rose to one hundred in 1877, and then to three hundred and twenty-two in 1880, and to more than four hundred in 1892.

Transportation. The history of the New England railroads cover less than one hundred years, but since their establishment they have done more than any other single influence towards changing the character of the inhabitants. We do not think it is saying too much if we say that it has done more than all others in the improvements of the passing years. Yet we cannot realize how slowly these modifications came.

When the Erie Canal was opened in 1825 from the Hudson to the Great Lakes, Boston had a population of 58,281, and it was the only important city east of the Hudson River. But it had no means of communicating with the interior of the country. Farmers living inland were obliged to take trips which covered weeks in their operation with ox teams to come to Boston and effect a change of goods with the city people. Canals were the only promising way of transportation, and these were expensive if not impossible to reach all points. A canal had been built from Lowell to Boston, a distance of

twenty-seven miles, but this was only a short link in the chain. In order to reach New York State a canal had been talked of between Boston and the Hudson, but this was likely to be too expensive to ever be profitable.

First Railroad in Massachusetts. In 1826 the Quincy Granite Railway Company obtained a charter to build a railway from Bunker Hill quarry, then opened in Quincy for the construction of Bunker Hill monument, to Neponset River, about four miles distant. The idea of this railway was suggested to Gridley Bryant, a young engineer, by reading of the plans of Stevenson for the construction of the Stockton and Darlington Railway between Liverpool and Manchester, England. Bryant surveyed for the road, invented the necessary appliances for the running of the road, and superintended its construction.

The building of this road cost \$50,000, and it was run by horse power. It was constructed of four inclined planes of different grades, operated by horse power. The appliances for its operation included the switch, the portable derrick, the turn-table, and the movable truck for an eight-wheel car. All of these features have been used in more recent work of railroading.

Boston to the Hudson. The success of the Bunker Hill road opened the eyes of the leading men to the plan of having other railways. So petitions began to come into the Legislature for other routes. Among these was one to open the country from Boston to the Hudson valley. A bill to this effect was looked upon favorably by the House and a committee appointed to investigate and report. This committee reported favorably. The road agreed upon was to be run by horse power, with a path on either side for the drivers.

The Legislature acted so slowly that it was not until 1830 that anything definite was done. In that year three routes were indefinitely chartered. One of these to the

Franklin Railroad Company to build a road between Boston and the state line in New Hampshire or Vermont. A second was to the Massachusetts Railroad Corporation to build a road from Boston to the state line on the west, with the privilege of extending the road to the Hudson. The third charter was given the Boston, Providence and Taunton Railroad Corporation to begin a road from Boston to the state line at Pawtucket or to the head of navigation on the Pawtucket River. None of these charters specified by what route the road should be built, and nothing came from these grants.

June 5, 1830, the Boston and Lowell Railroad Corporation was chartered to build a railroad from Boston to Lowell, and to maintain a railroad between these places for forty years.

Other Charters. From year to year other charters were granted to various corporations, some under minor restrictions, and usually against strong opposition. Some of the oppositions offered against these roads at this day seem ridiculous. Newspapers and pamphlets were opposed to the introduction of steam roads, or railroads moved by horse power. Not only would the houses of the people be in great danger of being set on fire and burned to the ground, but farmers were soberly told that their hens would stop laying and their cows would not feed upon the grass growing within sight of the road. The poor people would starve to death on account of their being nothing for them to do. Not only would the men working on the canals be deprived of their jobs, but hundreds of inn keepers and stage routes would be idle. Medical men were ready to assert that the gloom and damp of tunnels would be injurious to the mind and body of the person who traveled. A noted lawyer affirmed in good faith that no "power of steam could propel a train against a stiff breeze." The lack of information upon this subject of railroads for travel is

very fittingly illustrated by the remark of Daniel Webster in reply to a question from Doctor Phelps, who very enthusiastically supported the idea. Being pressed for an opinion, Webster finally said:

"Dr. Phelps, it is certainly a subject for very grave consideration whether roads for travel may not be made as you propose."

This careful expression gave Dr. Phelps considerable faith in the project in his mind.

Once the idea had received a good foothold, the matter of extending railroads increased quite rapidly in Massachusetts, as well as other states in New England. But, on the whole, New England was behind other sections of the country. Gradually the use and utility of steam power became more certain and more generally fixed in the minds of people. Opposition to railroads became less and less stubborn, until finally it was apparent to all level thinkers that they were a necessity to the traveling public.

Miles of Railroad in 1840. January 1, 1840, there were in New England four hundred and twenty-six and a half miles of railroad, over one-half of which were in Massachusetts, namely, two hundred and thirty-six miles. In ten years this record had increased to one thousand, one hundred and forty-two miles in Massachusetts alone, while in New England the aggregate was July 1, 1851, two thousand, eight hundred and forty-five miles.

State Interest in Railroads. Massachusetts always reserved the power to assume the ownership of the railroads she chartered, but has ignored this privilege. New England has been wise and careful in the management of its railroads. Hence the railroads have constantly been improved and the cost of transportation, until very recently, has been decreasing in cost.

The roads have been built under difficult physical conditions. The main lines were built before the appliances

in use today by engineers were known. In those days there were no diamond drills, no giant powder or dynamite, nitro-glycerine or steam shovels.

Owing to the severe climate and surface of New England, the maintenance and operation of these railroads have been difficult. In spite of all of these hindrances the railroads of Massachusetts have been conducted very successfully.

Railroad Commission. The first railroad commission in the United States was established in Massachusetts in 1869. The part and power of this commission was that publicity, or the knowledge on the part of the public of what a road was doing, would very likely bring a remedy to offset any shortcoming or mistake.

Electric Railroads. The use of steam power to run railroads led to the establishment of what became known as "street railways." These were smaller cars and run singly, the motive power being horses. At first these were confined to towns and cities, as local benefits. Then electricity succeeded the horse, and electric cars or "trolleys," as they now became known, ran into adjoining towns, until Massachusetts was covered by these ways of travel. In the order of events, these have now come to be largely supplanted by omnibuses, which will run without rails and carry the passenger wherever he may desire. So the trolley suffers, and lines that once paid well are being discontinued. Electricity is being gradually used in connection with steam railroads, so it is quite certain the day is not far distant when this will be the power to move carriages from place to place.

Foreign Trade. American foreign trade is older than internal trade by half a century. Boston merchants were writing bills of exchange and discounting bills in France and Spain when the currency of this country was given in feet of wampum and barrels of eggs. Within three years of the landing of the Pilgrims they were sending

out a cargo of timber and pelts. In 1634, on the 4th of July, a date easy to remember, commerce was begun in earnest with Great Britain. But sending raw material was not as profitable as to send the manufactured article. As early as 1637 Francis Ingalls and George Keyser of Lynn gave the American leather trade a boost it has never lost. In 1650 Everall bought a block in Boston from the profits he had made in sending shoes to South America and Jamaica.

Boston is happily situated at the head of Massachusetts Bay to receive and handle the goods that come to her markets. In regard to the fisheries she is especially fortunate. With her great arms spread up and down the coast she takes in all that comes her way. In addition to her waterways she has the railroads at her back, and what one does not do the other is certain to take on. Well may all of New England point with pride to her record, and so long as she sits so complacently on her hills so long will she remain the Mistress of the Sea.

The Stone Arch Bridge. Styles in the building of bridges has changed as much as the fashion in your clothes. The idea of crossing over a stream dry-shod must have originated with the crossing afforded by the fallen tree. Then came the pole bridge laid upon cross timbers, which was followed by plank bridges, as soon as saw mills were running. Then came the bridge with its stone walls builded on the end and the drive-way filled in with small stones and earth. Though few of these are built today, still many exist. About one hundred years ago many bridges were built of wood, timbers and flooring, while over it all was constructed a roof. Nearly all of these most romantic structures are gone. Next came the steel bridge, lighter and more serviceable, to be followed by the suspension bridge, where the support was heavy wires holding up not only the bridge but the weight placed upon it. Now we are building, in one form or another, the cement bridge.

In the interim there was another bridge, more artistic than any of the others. This was an imported idea, and it was known as "The Stone Arch Bridge." One of the earliest built in this country was proposed by Colonel John Choate of Ipswich. The town officials had confidence in him so he was given the contract to build what became known as the "Choate Bridge."

The arch and keystone principles in stone cutting were so little known among the common people of that day Colonel Choate immediately met with obstinate opposition. They were better acquainted with wooden structures, and refused to believe the builder. The bridge must fall of its own weight. Public opinion became so excited that the life of Colonel Choate was threatened if any untoward accident in case the bridge fell occurred. His peril was known and understood. On the day upon which the bridge was to be opened, mounted upon a fleet horse and armed with deadly weapons, the engineer waited in concealment half a mile away. Other horses had been provided at distances as reliefs, while the mob, many of whom had come for miles, gathered about the scene of action.

The timbers supporting the arches were removed. Still the bridge did not fall. It must go down the moment anyone stepped upon it. So slowly and warily the first brave (?) man stepped upon it, drew back and then stepped again, step by step, until he had crossed over.

The bridge was still standing!

With greater courage two men, and then half a dozen, crossed over. A farmer, grown bold, drove a loaded team across the bridge of doubt. He was safe, for the bridge was still standing.

A messenger was dispatched to the builder, trembling in his covert, and he rode boldly forward and over the bridge, which was now growing in favor. Colonel Choate was cheered, and he became the hero of Ipswich. His

fame as a builder of bridges flew over the colony. That was in 1764, and, boys, the bridge still stands, is likely to stand for hundreds of years to come, unless removed for good reasons.

Colonel Choate was an ancestor of Rufus Choate and other New England Choates. Many other bridges of this kind have been built. We know of one small town which has twelve. But the styles have changed and they are no longer fashionable.

The Mohawk Trail. We who have followed the devious windings and the air lines of the Old Bay Path must turn with deeper veneration and respect for that trail which leads us over the picturesque section of Massachusetts, the Berkshire Hills. Let us take, for instance, that portion which runs between the hamlet of Charlemont and North Adams. It is only sixteen miles, but where can you match another sixteen miles with so much of scenery, so much of rugged crags, so much of quiet brown fields in the plateaux, deep ravines and cold streams, grandeur and simplicity, magnificence and glory, all challenged by Greylock on the western slope?

Let us glance over this huge climb of uplands and gorges and catch a bit of history. Hither wound their ambitious way the lordly western denizens of wildwood and of harvest, the Mohawk Indians, on their warlike raids, when and where the mere utterance of their name sent thrills of terror to the dusky bosoms. Over this wildwood path went King Philip on his hopeful mission to seek succor from the western tribe, only to be thrown down like a covetous neighbor. Here Colonel Ephraim Williams, who established his fame by leaving his name attached to a college, came and went on his errands of fear, captivity, traveled the trail in defence of the people of the Northwestern outposts. Over this same course hastened the citizen-soldiers at the call for succor from Johnson at Lake George. Along this hardy way hurried

Benedict Arnold, when his name was a tower of strength, finding his plan for the capture of Ticonderoga had been anticipated by Ethan Allen and others, only to find himself defeated, but not conquered, in his ambition. Here, in the days of the dark Revolution, at the entreaty of Ira Allen, rushed the sturdy yeomanry of Massachusetts to aid Stark at Bennington.

All of these and other glories untold have sped their way along this shrine of beauty and sentiment, this natural temple of the valor of the days of old.

In truth the present broad boulevard is the third road over the mountains; the old and more direct trail of the Indians, the tedious climb of the old stage coach, and now the smoother highway where roll the rubber-tired wheels at the rate of almost a mile 'a minute. This is the old stage road delineated by Hawthorne in his American Notes for the year 1838.

It was a happy thought when Mr. C. Q. Richmond, a pioneer railroad builder in this vicinity, combined sentiment and tradition by calling it THE MOHAWK TRAIL.

You may if you will cut out all of this by darting through the mountainside by the Hoosatonic tunnel.

The name of the trail is significant. Where today the most warlike call is the whistle of the tireless automobile, once the wilderness echoed back the war-whoop of the dusky marauders. The western horizon, now so peaceful, was then likely at any time to be dotted with the erect figures of paint-bedaubed warriors eager for the fray, waiting for pillage and death. It is fitting this trail should be marked with red tokens, for it has seen its murders, heard its cries of distress, knew the agony of the captives and heard the groans of the dying. They not only carried terror to the heart of Massachusetts, but their defiant yells told of the overthrow of the Penacooks at the brave lands of the Upper Merrimack, but they helped to fill the Mamelons of the Saco, the Tarwasendathatha of the Kennebec.

Hoosac Tunnel. One of the wonderful exploits of New England, as it was told fifty years ago, was the tunneling of the mountain for the distance of five miles, from Deerfield River valley to its exit in North Adams. This mighty undertaking, begun in 1855, occupied over twenty years in its building and cost over twelve million dollars. The work has been accomplished by means of a boring machine, driven by compressed air and nitroglycerine, through solid mica slate. The opening of this tunnel shortened the distance by about ten miles and lessened the expense of moving freight over the mountains.

Rufus Putnam. Rufus Putnam, a cousin of General Israel Putnam of Connecticut, was the son of a blacksmith, born in Sutton, April 9, 1738, and he served through the French and Indian War with valor. He married and settled in Rutland.

During the siege of Boston he saw a book on Field Engineering at the headquarters of General Heath. He borrowed the book, and after studying it he planned the frame-work of a movable wooden fortification that could be constructed and placed in position. Washington liked the plan and told him to go ahead. To distract the attention of the British, who might be suspicious of the noise they would make, he ordered his troops to bombard the British.

While this was being done hundreds of men were put to work building the rude fortification by felling trees and fitting them together for the purpose. Over four thousand men were thus employed in the task. When it was done three hundred and seventy teams were employed in moving the new breastworks. It was an anxious movement, with the British spies on every hand, but it was successfully performed. The noise of the wheels was deadened by winding them with wisps of hay. The Americans breathed easier when the last of the lum-

bering teams had reached Dorchester Heights. General Washington declared he was the best engineer in the army.

Rufus Putnam had a colonizing instinct, and when New England began to talk about the West, he declared that Massachusetts should lead in the movement.

He obtained from Congress a grant of land in Ohio, then the "great and undiscovered West." This was the Ohio Company, and Rufus Putnam went at the head of the first colony from Danvers. Others joined them at Pittsburgh Pennsylvania. Moving down the Ohio River in a boat which they had named the Mayflower, they landed at Marietta, Ohio, so Rufus Putnam became the "Founder and Father of Ohio." The West and the East were united in the memory of the Mayflower and the Pilgrims.

Ward, the God of Battles. We know of no more romantic figure in annals of heroic adventure than Frederick Townsend Ward, a native of the Old Bay State, but won himself an immortal name among the Chinese. He appeared in China at the time of the Taiping Rebellion. Imagine, if you can, a boyish figure, not more than twenty-five, though he had already served under Garibaldi in Brazil, with Walker in Nicaragua, with the French in Crimea, against the Argentine domination in Uruguay, under Juarez in Mexico, appearing before the Chinese asking of the Chinese government \$75,000 for the capture of any city they might desire. The desperate Chinamen accepted the offer, and Ward began to assemble his troops.

First he appointed the few American soldiers of fortune as his officers, and then he recruited five hundred men, the outscourings of the Eastern ports. These were Malay pirates, Burmese dacoits, Tartar brigands, and deserters and fugitives from all the armies of the world. He offered these men one hundred dollars a day, and

one day for loot in every city. He armed his officers with revolvers and swords, and the men with short-barreled repeating rifles and the terrible and effective Malay Kris.

Ward's first attack was upon the city of Sankiang, one of the seven sacred cities of China. This city had walls twenty feet high and five miles long. It was held by five thousand blood-thirsty henchmen. With cool indifference Ward led his five hundred men across the rice-fields at the dawn of a July morning, 1860. He was met by such stubborn resistance that he soon knew his plans had been betrayed. With the loss of a goodly number of his men, he retreated.

He reorganized his legion, adding new men to take the place of those who had been slain, and he again assaulted the town. This time he succeeded in crowding himself through a narrow opening in the gate and, followed by his second officer, Forester, and, one by one, by his men, he finally obtained such a foothold that he held the gate all night. In the morning reinforcements came from Shanghai and the sacred city was in the hands of the government.

He was now the hero of China. The priests of Confucius blessed him, and the government paid him his seventy-five thousand dollars, while Ward himself went on recruiting his army, taking his men from the Chinese inhabitants. He now led his legion against Singpo, and he was successful. Then he went on with his old plan of taking cities, always being prompt to collect his fee. The merchants of Shanghai had given him land out of the city. Finally he received so many wounds in battle that he was told only an operation would save his life. So he went back to Paris for this relief.

While he was gone the revolutionists rallied and recovered must of what he had gained. Then he asked permission to raise his "Ever Victorious Army," which he did, and went into the fight a second time. This legion

soon became six thousand strong, and they were never defeated. City after city fell, until his name became a source of terror to his enemies.

The end came just as he was mustering his legion to attack one of the last strongholds of the rebels. A stray bullet took him in the chest and he was rushed on board a British warship by his friend. Taking Forester by the hand as they laid him down, he said:

“Go take the city, Ed.”

Forester went back to lead the Invincible Army to victory, and as he did so the master mind of the army passed on to his Master, or as the Chinese believed, went to join their own gods. He was buried at Sunki-ang, in the temple of Confucius, where he now sleeps, known in Chinese history as “Hwa, the God of Battles.” He laid the foundation for the greatness of Gordon of Chinese fame, for the latter became his successor in leading the army that was never defeated. As another has said, “He was a gallant gentleman, a great soldier, and a man who could take the hearts of other men into his own hands as lesser humans could not do.”

CHAPTER XII.

THE ROMANCE OF INDUSTRY

Inland Commerce. From the story of the rise of Commerce we must now turn to the rise and progress of business through manufactures. This gives us the Romance of Industry, which is just as essential to such a country as we are describing as is the Conquest of the Sea by this same territory.

Home Industry. The Pilgrim learned early that industry is a resource not to be trifled with. Who would prosper must improve the opportunity which comes his way. It is a delusion to think differently. So the pioneers of the Old Bay State planned to have work at home. This was the more necessary for the reason that the home government was determined from the outset to keep all knowledge of manufacture from the colonists she could. This seems to us a very narrow spirit, and in the end it is certain to work harm to those who uphold it.

To show the disposition of England not to allow the province the liberty of making her own products, it is related that Chatham, who was one of the best friends this country ever had in Great Britain, once said, "If I had my way they should not make a hob-nail." But they did make these same hob-nails, and they invented the machinery upon which they were made. It is said upon good authority that at the breaking out of the Revolution seven-eighths of the clothing made in Massachusetts was made at home. It should be remembered that these clothes were the work mainly of the women, working in their spare time. This does not look as if there were many idlers in the homes. It was necessary to have those places where fulling and perhaps dyeing could be done,



EARLY INDUSTRY

but it is safe to say that seven-eighths of the people were clothed by the work of their wives and daughters. With equal truth might we speak of the household goods of the families.

Vehicles of work and travel were made at home in spite of foreign intervention. England tried to stop this with its opposition to the manufacture of iron. But it found when the Revolution came on that the colonists were able to cast their own cannon and draw their wheel tires.

The war over and the calls increasing for goods at home, to say nothing of those needed for the market, caused the American people to look more closely into the industry of making them. The distance across the ocean, and the frequent difficulties between England and France made it unsafe to travel. They had water-power which was necessary, and it was soon found easy to begin the manufacture of cotton goods. These factories were established in Rhode Island, through the efforts of Samuel Slater, and in Beverly, Waltham, and elsewhere in Massachusetts.

So the more important water-falls of the State were utilized, and wherever these factories were erected the settlements grew in population. Hence we have our cities, our Lowells, Lawrences, Holyokes, and Fall Rivers. As these mills increased in numbers and volume of goods turned out, it became evident that here was a way of increasing the wealth of the people. Gradually steam power took the place of water power, which proved cheaper and more steady in its volume. The result of these changes changed the methods of the inhabitants in earning their living and a competence above a bare living. In this many turned from the sea in getting their business. This made the people a manufacturing community.

One industry generally leads to another, so the development of the cotton industry led men to making ma-

chines until the trade of a machinist is an important one. So one industry fostered another, until the people of Massachusetts had a greater variety of callings than any other community. This worked to her good. We find this proven in the city of Worcester, where the greatest varieties of occupation and industries prevail. So it is said that within "a radius of ten miles encircling Worcester there is a larger range of manufacture than in any circle of the same diameter elsewhere in the world."

Manufactures. Four great staple lines of manufacturing dominate Massachusetts today. These are textiles, boots and shoes, tools and machinery, and paper. The greatest of these in bulk and importance is the textile industry.

Considering them in the order of their importance, we find that cotton and woolen manufacture has developed solely through New England effort. England guarded her secrets of machinery by which this manufacture could be done more rapidly and cheaper, determined that her colonies should not be benefited by the inventions of her workmen. Samuel Slater, who is known as the "Father of the Textile Industry," worked in an English factory until he had mastered the trade, and then he ran away to this country with the invention of the machinery in his brain. From him and others our manufactures got a sufficient knowledge so they went ahead and made machinery even better than they did in Great Britain.

Massachusetts was fortunate in having streams with power to turn her wheels, so the state manufactures an amount of goods beyond her size and population. The pioneers in these fields have produced so large an output that a few of her centres, such as Lowell, Lawrence, Fall River and New Bedford, are known the world over.

Let us illustrate this with a bit of a story. A country gentleman, who delighted to fill his pockets with acorns, would plant them wherever he went. Asked one day why

he did this, he made reply: "Men will forget me when I am gone, but they won't forget the oaks I plant." His words proved true, for long after he was dead men would speak of his place as the best planted they knew. So has developed the history of manufacture in Massachusetts. It has not only covered the entire state and continent, but it is known world wide.

Woolen Industry, Importance Of. Among all of the industries of New England, the cotton manufacture alone stands ahead of them in importance, and that not so very far. It exceeds the shoe and boot industry, not only of New England, but of the entire country. It was natural this should be the case both on account of the severity of the climate and the needs of the wearer. Wool produced at home in greater quantities than any other product came to be of importance next to the food supply. There did not seem to be but three thousand sheep in New England in 1640, so it is not to be wondered at if we say that wool has never reached the stage where the demand did not exceed the supply of it.

For a period, or until machinery was made to do the work in the closing years of the 18th century, the farmer raised his few sheep, he clipped and washed the wool, while the wife and daughters made the yarn and wove the coarse fabrics on the hand loom. So the long evenings were passed in this busy industry, where now the time is spent in the movie house, or at some social gathering.

Before the machine fulling process went into action, we have been told that one kind of home fulling was done something like this. When the cloth was woven, the young people were invited to the house, the kitchen was cleared for action, and in the middle were placed stout splint-bottomed chairs in a circle, connected by a cord to prevent recoil. On these sat the young men, with shoes and stockings off, and trousers rolled up to the

knees. In the centre were placed the cloths, wet with warm soap suds, and then the barefooted young men began to kick by regular steps, sending the goods around and around the circle, until the goods were shrunk to the desired size. This done, the girls began their part of the task. Their arms were bare to the elbows, and it was their duty to wring out the fabrics and hang them on the line to dry. This seems to have been followed something like the old-fashioned husking bee and the apple bee. But this a long time ago became obsolete.

During the days when the Revolution was coming and the Stamp Act for one was being pushed, the people of Massachusetts became dangerously imbued with the thought that New England should be independent in the matter of what they wore as well as what they ate. The test of patriotism was the fact that one wore domestic-made clothes.

Spinning Bees. The most popular form of giving force and effect to the feeling which animated men and women alike at the beginning of the 18th century were the spinning bees. We are told that in 1749, on the occasion of the "Fourth Anniversary of the Boston Society for Promoting Frugality and Industry," three hundred "young female spinsters" spun at their wheels on Boston Common. In Northboro "forty-four women spun two thousand two hundred and twenty-three knots of yarn which they presented to the soldiers, who no doubt in turn presented it to their mothers and sisters to weave into uniforms for them to wear in the service."

American Woolen Manufacturing Company. The American Woolen Company is the largest wool manufacturing concern in the world. As a matter of fact, no less than nine-tenths of the machinery used in this big business is made in Massachusetts. In this respect Lowell, Whitinsville, Hopedale, Worcester and Hyde Park lead.

The great Sturtevant plant in Hyde Park is one of the largest companies in the world to manufacture power plants. This takes us back to the day when Massachusetts was the workshop of the entire nation. It is looked back to with honest pride.

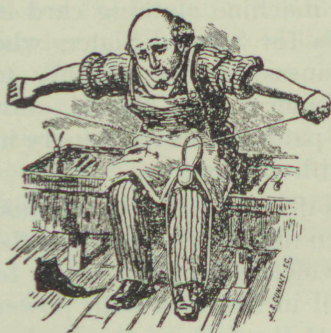
Fathers of Woolen Manufacture. As Samuel Slater was the Father of Cotton Manufacture, as it related to factory products, so do the Schofield brothers, John and Arthur, deserve the credit of being the pioneers of the manufacture of woolen goods. The mill at Byfield did not prove a financial success, so the brothers removed to Connecticut, but eventually Arthur went to the Berkshire County and located at Pittsfield, where he built himself another carding machine and went about his work of making rolls. His removal to Pittsfield was an event worthy of mention, inasmuch as the section soon became noted as a woolen manufacturing centre, so the county at one time ranked as the leader in this kind of industry.

Carding Machines. To Pliny Earle of Leicester belongs the credit of making the first machine clothing card in the United States. He did this for Samuel Slater, who had been retarded in his business by his inability to clothe his cotton-carding machinery as he should. Mr. Earle was so successful that he patented his machinery in England, where it was used with success.

An Early Woolen Mill. It is difficult today to say just where and when the first woolen mill was operated in the country. The most reliable evidence we have seems to show that the first woolen mill in America with power machinery was built in 1794, at the falls of the Parker River in Byfield, parish of Newburyport, Massachusetts. The energetic builders and promoters of the enterprise were John and Arthur Schofield, who came to New England from Saddleworth, Yorkshire, England, in 1793. The machinery for this pioneer mill was mostly built in Newburyport, and is claimed to have been the first made

in America. John Schofield later removed to Montville, Connecticut, where he built the first mill in that state. A fulling mill had been in operation here since 1687.

The Story of Shoe-Making. Darius Cobb and Thomas Hunt began the manufacture of shoes in Abington in 1800, and thereby opened a new light upon the shoe and leather industry. Those were the days when springless deadbottoms tried "men's souls." A great improvement has been made since that day, now over a hundred years behind us. Thomas Beard, a shoemaker, who reached Plymouth in 1629, and was immediately made a permanent resident by an allotment of land, brought with him leather for soles and uppers, tanned, for all we know, as Simon, the tanner, did in his house by the sea in the days of the Apostles. He brought the old world traditions and craft, waxed his thread and fastened the hog bristle to its end, and began at once to make shoes for the feet of his new associates.



SHOE MAKING

Like most everything else, shoe-making grew as a natural art, year by year. In primitive times the climate and nature had much to do with improvements in shoe-making. As in everything else, these improvements came slowly. The shoe-maker seemed to be an imitator rather than an inventor. So it was two hundred years before any invention was suggested that outlasted the life

of the inventor. Invention of shoe-making machinery followed on, but without material success, until Parker's leather-splitting device and Preston's device for pegging shoes came slowly into use. Then, in 1845, came

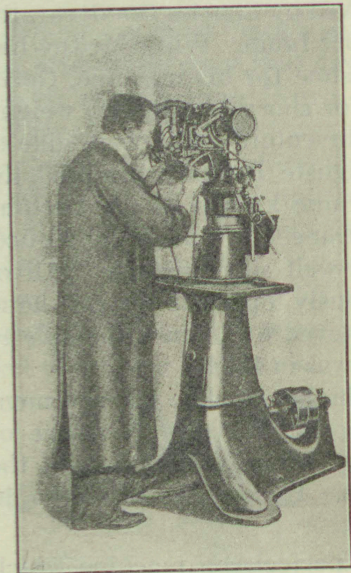
Gilmore's rolling machine, which proved to be saver of time. And then Howe invented a little eye-pointed machine needle, which soon turned the heads of manufacturers. Textile fabrics and leather now became an object for further inventors.

McKay caused a revolution in shoe manufacturing by his invention. He was followed by Charles Goodyear, the son of the Goodyear of rubber fame. While McKay had depended upon the heavier shoe for his machine, Goodyear designed his machine for shoes of a lighter weight. Goodyear found two men—inventors—who were able to help him out. In 1864 Auguste Destouy invented the turning machine, which became known as the Destouy invention, while Christian Dancel invented the Dancel welt guide; these made the welt shoe possible. All of these inventions were seriously opposed by the hand shoe-maker. They were believed by them to be able to take work from them. This was in 1864.

Now a third inventor in the list of shoe improvement men appears. He is Sydney W. Winslow, a native of Salem, who was a small boy when McKay bought the Blake sewing machine rights. He saw the weakness in plan of a machine-made shoe.

The Dancel invention had perfected a machine which was able to sew upon the welts of a shoe, making a chain stitch while the shoe was on the last, the welt, upper and inner sole being caught at each stroke of a curved needle. The next link in the work was the mechanical lasting of the shoe. This was the task Mr. Winslow set himself about doing. He found a man by the name of Jan Ernest Matzeliger, a Dutch engineer from South America, with the mark of consumption upon him. The object to be obtained was to match the hand twist given the leather in order to bring it over the toe. The success of the plan in mind was still far from being attained. But a company was formed, with an office in Beverly.

Mr. Winslow was made its President, and George W. Brown was chosen as its Superintendent. As the factory at Beverly grew, an experimental department with over forty designers in control, something was pretty certain to be done. Eventually it came, but not until 1903, when



MODERN WAYS

the perfect "puller-over" was completed. Improvements have been made since then, until the beholder is amazed as he looks upon the machine which pulls the leather over and smooths it down with almost human intelligence. The fame of the Beverly factory has been spread around the world, until today the machine-made shoe is a certainty. And mind you, nearly all of these inventions and improvements have been done in Massachusetts. Do you wonder if the Old Bay State remains the centre of shoe operations? The shoe

business has been one of the sources which has built up her prestige as a manufacturing state. She points with pride to her Haverhill, Lawrence, Fall River and New Bedford, and others of greater or lesser magnitude. So machinery has freed the foot through the comfort and durability it gives from machine-made shoes.

Shoe Pegs by Machinery. Paul Pillsbury invented the first machinery to make shoe pegs in Byfield. This invention did much to increase and revolutionize the business of shoe manufacture.

The First Tannery. Though it seems like an humble calling, the tanning of hides was quite an important matter. So we find records of tanneries soon after the landing of the Pilgrims. No doubt they acquired valuable hints in tanning from the Indians. In those days more time was required to effect the work than is taken today. It required a year's time in which to suitably tan the hide. At first the bark of the oak tree was used, but as this became more scarce that of the hemlock became useful. Today the process has been shortened so leather is tanned in as few days as it required months in the time of our forefathers. Tanners were numerous on the South Shore for a number of years. Many tanneries existed in early Boston, and we find mention made of the "stench prevailing from same."

Sumach early played its part in tanning, so the plant was shipped to England in considerable quantities. Men of noted families were not ashamed to be known as tanners. So we find the Mears, Jones, Heaths, Davis, Perins, Williams and Winslows among the industrious tanners. Tradition says the first tan-yard was laid down in 1634, but before the Revolution it had almost disappeared from Boston. Dorchester and Roxbury were important places of tanners. The Indian women were expert tanners in their day, according to their methods, which was largely done through rubbing with stone instruments, worn smooth on one end.

Nails First Made by Machinery. The first nails made by machinery were made possible by the invention of Jacob Perkins, who was a genius in this respect. Before the invention of Mr. Perkins nails were wrought by hand, and one thousand was a long day's work. Perkins made it possible for a man to make hundreds of thousands in a day.

The Manufacture of Glass. The invention of glass must have created much talk in its day. The inventor

must have been a person of privilege. In England glass is not mentioned in windows until 1180. It is spoken of in tones of wonder.

It was January 3, 1752, before we find anything done definitely in New England. There were certain families among the German and French immigrants who were extremely poor and unfortunate in having expended all the money they had trying to start the business of glass making. The Legislature did go to the assistance of the poor families, but nothing beneficial seemed to come of this. The grant of a lot of land in Lee of 1,564 acres was given them, but nothing definite came of it.

Temple Glass Works. The next action taken in this line was by a Mr. Hews of Boston, who chose a place in Temple, New Hampshire, for the scene of his efforts. After meeting with failure in raising money from a lottery ordered by the State, he builded glass works from his own money. The sand there was desirable and ashes were secured, but his works, which were worked by a party of Hessians who had been captured in the Revolution, were set on fire by a drunken fireman, so all of his money, \$50,000, was lost.

Soon after this overthrow Mr. Hews met Mr. Charles F. Kupfer, a practical glass maker from Germany. This gentleman agreed to undertake the manufacture of glass, and while Mr. Kupfer returned to Germany to get workers, Mr. Hews obtained from the Massachusetts courts the exclusive right to manufacture glass for ten years.

Mr. Kupfer had a more difficult task on hand, as it was a criminal offense for him to entice workmen away from their task, or for them to leave their German masters. But Mr. Kupfer did succeed in getting away with a staff of workmen, who were received with great show of respect in Boston, though they were an ill-looking crowd. Their works were located at the corner of King-

ston and Essex Streets. This firm was very successful for a term of years, when new owners got possession and through mismanagement failed.

In 1800 some rich men in Albany, New York, formed a company and started glass manufacture ten miles out of Albany. But the sand did not prove suitable, so they moved to Sand Lake, about twenty miles west of Pittsfield. Finding the sand here unfit for their purpose, another move was made, this time to Cheshire, where they located until burned out in 1816. These works were not rebuilt, but two years later Isaac B. Fox and Nathan R. Crandall revived the business. They sold out after three years to sons of the first named partner. The Fox Brothers carried on the business very successfully until 1853.

The first years of the 19th century were very active in the incorporation of glass companies. Most of them were short-lived. The Berkshire region seemed to be fortunate in having sand most suitable for the work. Not less than fifteen companies were incorporated, but most of them gave up after a few years. The most prominent of the works were the New England Glass Company of East Cambridge, incorporated in 1818, and the Boston and Sandwich in 1826. Both of these companies got their sand from the Berkshire country. These were quite successful, and would have been more so had not the fuel and transportation cost them too much.

Berkshire Glass Company. On March 23, 1847, the Berkshire Glass Company was incorporated and this became a profitable concern, its specialty being window-glass. Though Berkshire County has the purest, whitest sand in the world, manufacturers here suffer seriously in competition with other sections owing to the cost of fuel and freight rates.

Paper Manufacture. One of the oldest industries of Massachusetts was paper making. This was started in 1730 by Daniel Henchman, a book-seller in Boston. See-

ing the opportunity for the sale of good paper, he established a mill in Milton, where he achieved success.

While his mill was in operation young Zenas Crane, with visions of future success, mounted his horse and rode toward the interior, until he came to the pure waters of Dalton in the fall of 1799. Within two years he had a small, one-vat paper mill running, which was capable of turning out 2,500 sheets daily, and employed seven hands.

Soon after, in 1809, the Old Red Mill was built by Carson, Chamberlain & Wiswell. The following year Mr. Crane became a partner and its sole owner in 1822. This mill was burned in 1870, and was succeeded by a stone mill, fitted up with the best machinery in the world. This became known as the Pioneer Mill. Upon the death of Zenas Crane in 1845, he was followed by his sons, Zenas M. and James B. Crane, who have made the name of Crane famous throughout the world. In 1879 they built what was called the Government Mill, where all of the paper for the United States bonds, checks, postal notes, certificates, and National bank and treasury notes are made. This company came to manufacture more money paper on which the money of the world is printed than any other firm. It supplies many foreign countries with their stock.

From the small mill of Zenas Crane have come over twenty-five paper mills today. The pure water of the streams of the Old Bay State are well adapted to the manufacture of good quality of paper, so some of the largest and best mills in the world are located here.

Morgan Envelope Company. Founded in Springfield, in 1864, by Elisha Morgan. In 1882 a handsome factory six stories in height was built, where this company had a contract to furnish the United States government with postal cards. This company furnished and delivered 51,000,000 cards in ninety days. The government looked

to this company for its supply of stamped envelopes and wrappers, which finally reached the stupendous figure of 1,000,000,000 in a year.

Dennison Tag. You have seen the Dennison shipping tag so commonly used in shipping merchandise. These were made and invented by a man from Brunswick, Maine, and sent out from the mill in the Boston, Roxbury and Brunswick plants. This company also make a wonderful display of jewelry boxes, where millions are made each year of many designs and ingenious uses. These are only hints of the paper manufactures and uses applied to the craft in this state.

New England Cutlery. At one time England had a monopoly of the cutlery trade in this country. But in 1834 John Russell founded at Deerfield a plant which was to change this business. Determined to make as attractive goods as was made in Great Britain, he soon founded a business which outrivaled the works across the ocean. The great works are at Turner's Falls and cost over a million of dollars. The works cover over six acres floor space and is the oldest and largest American house manufacturing jewelry. Almost four thousand different varieties of articles are made here, and the name of Russell is a safe guarantee of the worth of the goods.

Metal Drills. Formerly in drilling a hole through a piece of iron a flat piece of steel the required size was pointed so as to cut the desired hole. Then these were twisted, but neither made an accurate opening and were not satisfactory. Finally a man by the name of Morse made a drill from a solid piece of steel turned to the desired size, and had the twist or groove cut out of the solid stock; he made a drill that worked satisfactorily.

With this invention for a starting point the Morse Twist Drill and Machine Company was started at New Bedford. A new industry was begun which has proved

highly profitable. These works continue to thrive and have offices in all parts of the world.

First Ironworks in America. The old Ironworks House, built in Saugus, in 1646, still stands, restored to its original form as it was built almost three hundred years ago. The huge chimney stack is twenty-five feet long and ten feet wide. "The first casting, a kettle made in 1642, is still in evidence and the field behind the house still shows traces of the pits from which the iron was dug. It was bog ore, the best now imported as Swedish iron." The old house is now called "Broadhearth," and is used for a museum.

First Arc-Welded Bridge. An advance method in bridge building was dedicated on the afternoon of March 14, 1928, at Chicopee, when the world's first span in one piece was opened. There is not a rivet or bolt in the bridge. It was built by fusing the various members together at their joints by means of the intense heat of the electric arc. The advantage gained by this method of welding is a saving of about one third of the tonnage of steel usually required. This test, which was witnessed by a good crowd of people, officials and citizens, who came considerable distance to see the result of this modern bridge building, is likely to supersede other ways in highway and railroad bridges. This was accepted by the railroad company and proved very satisfactory.

Elevators. In large cities like Boston the land becomes too valuable for business to be conducted wholly on the first and second floors. It requires too much time and energy to climb on foot buildings many stories in height. Hence came about the invention of elevators, by which not only persons can be lifted to great heights but merchandise can be raised as well for storage or business use.

Among the earliest and biggest passenger and freight elevators was the Whittier Machine Company of Rox-

bury. As early as 1839 Campbell, Whittier & Company began the manufacture of elevators and other inventions of common use.

Heating Systems. Knowing there was need of better heating system in this New England climate, Walworth Manufacturing Company was ready to open business in New York City in 1841, and a year later opened a place of business and work in South Boston. During the first four years of its operation there was no other firm of its kind in the world. The company speedily became successful and their work is widely scattered over the country. Their place of business covers over ten acres and they employ over seven hundred men, besides the men who conduct their offices in Boston.

Tack Manufacturing. The largest and most complete tack manufacturing in the world has made Taunton famous. This enterprising business was begun in 1827 by Albert Field. He did his work on one machine and took his work to Boston for sale himself. He had sons whom he admitted into the company under the title of A. Field & Sons, in 1855. In 1869 the growing concern was incorporated for \$250,000. This company makes not only tacks, but wire nails, eyelets, saddle nails, glazier's points. The size of these products varies from six-inch nails down to tacks which take four thousand to the ounce weight. Their goods are sent the world over and they have offices in all of the countries.

Lamson Cash Railway. As business increased and the matter of making change in trade became more and more important, William S. Lamson, of Lowell, devised a scheme by which the whole affair might be simplified and made easier. He invented what has become known as the Lamson Cash Railway System, by which means cash boys and the inevitable delay and confusion which follows was removed. In 1881 the system was put into actual practice in Lowell, and two years later its suc-

cess warranted the formation of a company with one million dollars as a working capital. Since then it has been improved and extended, until now every store of any size is using this cunning device.

The Romance of Machinery. We have told you of the invention and improvements made in machinery to manufacture cotton goods; we have told you of the machinery which succeeded hand-work in the making of shoes; we have traced briefly the tanning of leather, the invention of machinery to make machinery, and many other improvements. We now come to the greatest of all, the Romance of Farm and Household Machinery, Oh, but there is a romance in even this! There is, in truth, a romance in every trade and phase of life. Fiction contains no romance more fascinating than the story of the invention and improvement in the implements used upon the soil by the progressive farmer, or the advance of his good wife from the duties of a servant to the independent condition of the woman who today is the equal in dignity of the lords of the nation. The influence of this change is more far-reaching than the result of any advancement of any war.

The Farmers' Friends. As important as any of these has been the increase of farm machinery, most of which has been accomplished within a hundred years, or a little more. Cotton manufacture could not have risen to its importance had it not been for the invention of a New England school teacher, who found himself stranded in Georgia, who invented the cotton gin, the last word being merely a contraction of engine. Before that time a Negro slave had to work steadily a day's time to separate a pound of cotton lint from the seed. This was too slow and expensive until Eli Whitney's inventive genius solved the example.

The great western plains, suitable for raising grain in great quantities, were really quite useless for the harvest

so long as this had to be done by hand. Then Cyrus McCormick stepped in, invented his wonderful McCormick reaper, and improved it until today the West is the Granary of the World.

These are of less account to the Massachusetts farmer, but he has had his heavy work made lighter and quicker by the invention of the mowing machine, the hay rake, the hay loader, the corn picker, the Babcock tester and the cream separator to help him along in his labor. Mechanical power has been made available to him by the gas tractor, the auto truck and the automobile, which no longer leaves the agriculturist in isolation. In the house the improvements have been equally as wonderful until the dreamer has prophesied that the day is coming when the farmer will sit in his house and by pressing a button will plant, cultivate and harvest his crops, while he reads his day's paper.

Industrial Development. For the past seventy-five years Massachusetts has kept on with her industrial development, until she has become one of the richest sections of the country. It is true her agriculture has suffered somewhat in comparison with the West, but she has not lost ground in her manufactures. Her prosperity has not suffered, and she has continued to progress.

CHAPTER XIII

MASSACHUSETTS IN THE CIVIL WAR AND OTHER WARS

Shay's Rebellion. As an aftermath of the Revolution, in 1785, an insurrection took place, which has gone under the name of Shay's Rebellion. This uprising was brought about from the scarcity of money and general depression in business. The insurgents met at Hatfield on the 22nd of August, 1786, and gave expression to their feelings, generally blaming those in official positions. That fall 150 assembled at Northampton under Daniel Shay, who had been an officer in the Revolution. This body of men took possession of the court house, and in December marched upon the court at Springfield.

This was more than the State could stand, and four thousand men were sent under General William Shepard to stop the raid upon the arsenal at Springfield, January 25, 1787. General Benjamin Lincoln followed the retreating rebels to Petersham, where one hundred and fifty were made prisoners. The remainder of the rebels fled. Fourteen of those taken were tried and condemned to die. But they were afterwards pardoned.

War of 1812. The War of 1812 did not find much favor in the state. Massachusetts was generally opposed to the policy of President Madison and the War of 1812. The embargo laid upon the country in 1808 was seriously felt by the State, which depended largely upon her commerce for her prosperity. But she did her part, as usual, and her story of heroism is told somewhat in the chapter on the Story of the Sea. The signing of the Treaty of Peace at Ghent February 18, 1815, was hailed with delight.

The Mexican War. The East was not very much interested in the Mexican War. This was brought about by the annexation of Texas to the United States. In May, 1846, General Taylor crossed the Rio Grande, and a series of engagements followed in which the American arms were uniformly successful. The war ended in the addition of California and New Mexico to the American Union.

Slavery in Massachusetts. It should be borne in mind that the Old Bay State from the beginning was opposed to slavery. This fact is proved by the sending back, as early as 1645, a slave brought from Africa. This humane act was repeated twice in the following year. But this feeling did not long prevail as a guide for men, for we soon see the slave-trade firmly fixed in the mind of the public. We even see the pioneers selling Indians into slavery in the West Indies.

Of course there were exceptions to this, and among the most vigorous opponents was Judge Sewell, whose diary is filled with protests against the unholy traffic. He wrote a pamphlet, entitled "The Selling of Joseph," which was really the first tract against slavery ever printed. Still the business went on, many of the Africans captured, or "bought," as they were claimed to have been, came to Massachusetts to stay. It will be remembered that Tituba, a colored maid, half-Indian and half negro, came as a servant in the family of Mr. Parris. Her wild ideas started the crusade against witchcraft. It seems like the irony of fate that Peter Faneuil, who gave to Boston the "Cradle of Liberty," was himself engaged in the slave trade. It is even said at the time of his death one of his ships, "The Jolly Bachelor," was taking on her cargo of human beings to be sold into slavery.

Slaves Not Numerous. For some reason, probably because they were not profitable, few slaves were employed in the fields. They were mostly used as household ser-

vants. Many of them were allowed to engage in any calling they liked. As a matter of fact one of the victims shot down in the Boston Massacre before the Revolution was an Indian and Negro half-breed named Crispus Attucks. The cutting off of the British supply train in Menotomy, now Arlington, was planned by a Negro, and it was a Negro who shot Major Pitcairn at the battle of Bunker Hill.,

In the Congress which voted on the Declaration of Independence, the New England members would have gladly voted to insert a clause against slavery. Jefferson had included such a clause in the original draft, but this had been voted down by the Southern members.

Equal Rights. As early as 1769 the Provincial Courts had declared that no person born in Massachusetts, even if the child of a slave, was a slave. The Bill of Rights adopted in the Constitution of 1780, reads "All men are born free and equal, and have certain natural, essential, and inalienable rights." In relation to this decision, we see the grounds upon which the matter of a former slave was settled.

Story of Quaco. The great English historian, Mr. H. G. Wells, in his "Story of Civilization," designated the freeing of Quaco as an event of world-wide importance. Quaco was born into slavery in Barre, where he was sold with his parents when he was nine months old, to a Mr. Caldwell. This gentleman promised him his freedom when he should become 25 years old. But Mr. Caldwell died and his widow inherited our colored boy. She promised him his freedom when he should reach 21 years of age. But she married a Mr. Nathaniel Jennison, who outlived her, inherited her estate, and with the rest young Quaco.

Upon becoming of age and finding his new master was not going to carry out the provisions of the will, Quaco ran away. He was found at work in the field of John

Caldwell, a brother of his first master, by Mr. Jennison and others. They seized Quaco and flogged him and shut him up for two hours. John Caldwell went to a lawyer for his young friend, and action for trespass was brought against Jennison in the Court of Common Pleas. Quaco won and was given a verdict of fifty pounds. Jennison then turned upon the negro and brought suit against John Caldwell for interfering, and this was decided against him. Finally an indictment was found against Jennison by the Supreme Court for unlawfully imprisoning and punishing Quaco, and so Massachusetts established her right to abolish slavery. So slavery was declared inconsistent with the Constitution of Massachusetts as established in 1680, and whereby it is declared "That all men are born free and equal." The decision of that court in 1783 abolished slavery in Massachusetts. That was the first decision on that subject in the history of America.

Missouri Compromise. While the Negroes of Massachusetts observed each succeeding anniversary of Quaco's triumph, the matter dragged along until 1820 the Missouri Compromise was adopted by Congress. By this act the country below the southern boundary of Missouri might be settled as slave states. The state of Massachusetts strongly opposed this act, and its spokesman, Daniel Webster, opposed it with all of the might of his tongue. So affairs drifted along until 1854, when the South drove through Congress the passage of what was known as "The Nebraska Act," which opened up land to the north of the Compromise boundary to slave-holding settlers.

Massachusetts bitterly opposed this move, and Eli Thayer at once introduced in the Massachusetts Legislature a plan for colonizing Kansas. That plan took effect and in August, 1854, Charles Robinson, a Massachusetts man, with forty to fifty New England followers, founded

the City of Lawrence, Kansas, which was the first settlement in that state. Until 1860 that state was settled by New England men, with the avowed purpose of making it a free state, so it became the battle-ground of what in 1861 was the national question and brought on the Civil War.

Abolition. The Federalists were succeeded by the Whigs, as the new party became known. While this new party was running in Massachusetts a question came to the front which put every other question in the shade. This question went to the very roots and morals of politics and society. The original agitators of this subject came from New England, from Massachusetts. They were called Abolitionists, and they included such men as William Lloyd Garrison, Wendell Phillips, who succeeded John Quincy Adams in the grave fight for human liberty. After 1850 Massachusetts was almost unitedly for anti-slavery, that is, opposition to the slave power.

Massachusetts voted for Lincoln in 1860, and has been generally Republican in politics ever since. She did her part—in fact, more than her part—in the Civil War, and she was one of the four New England states to give more men than she was called upon to furnish. She furnished one three-year soldier to every ten of her population, or one in every two of her men of military age.

Phillips and Sumner. A strong point was gained when this faction won over such men as Wendell Phillips and Charles Sumner. Both were men of education and culture. They were graduates of Harvard and entered into the contest in a whole-hearted manner. The stirring eloquence of Phillips on the platform. In 1837 he made a fiery speech in Faneuil Hall on December 8, 1837, against the murder of Lovejoy, who had been killed at Alton, Illinois, while a mob tore down his press, which defended the anti-slavery cause. Phillips was eloquent and impassioned; his style of delivery was direct and simple. He

was the American Demosthenes. Outside of his slavery addresses he was famous for his lecture on the Lost Arts.

William Lloyd Garrison. For twenty-five years the leading topic of discussion was slavery, and naturally the foremost orations were for or against this unholy traffic.



WILLIAM LLOYD GARRISON

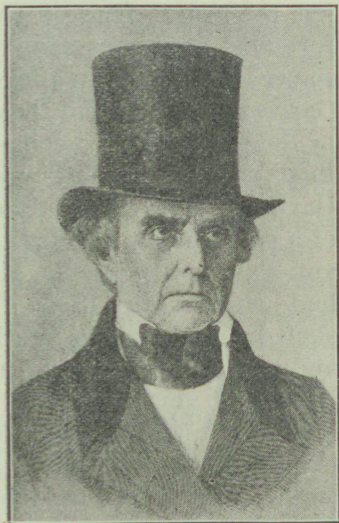
ates were few in number
folly.

In this field Massachusetts led the way. One of the foremost advocates against slavery was William Lloyd Garrison. The first of these to take up what seemed then a hopeless task was Garrison, who was editor of a small paper devoted to anti-slavery arguments. He had written in 1830, "I shall be as harsh as truth and as uncompromising as justice. I am in earnest; I will not flinch; I will not excuse; I will not retreat a single inch; and I will be heard." But his associates were few in number and condemned for their

Daniel Webster. Born in Salisbury, New Hampshire, January 18, 1782, he was graduated from Dartmouth College and admitted to the bar in 1805. In 1813 he was elected from New Hampshire to Congress and in 1814. Began to practice law in Boston in 1816; he resigned from Congress, and was elected to the United States Senate in 1826. He was appointed Secretary of State in the cabinet of President Harrison, and retained his seat during the administration of President Tyler. He negotiated the Ashburton Treaty of Peace in 1842. Was re-elected United States Senator by Massachusetts

in 1842. He was Secretary of State for President Fillmore. He died at Marshfield on October 24, 1852.

These are the leading facts in the life of Daniel Webster. Outside of these he became the acknowledged leader of the American bar. The rival leaders in his own party made way for him in the race for distinction. Most of his mature years were passed in the halls of legislation. He discussed, either for the purpose of support or in opposition, the most important measures of government. He did this during a stormy period in our national life. The name of Daniel Webster cannot be forgotten while the history of our country lives. Five famous speeches by Webster were quite sufficient to establish his fame as an orator in its flow of rhetoric, its truth as logic, coupled with the



DANIEL WEBSTER

genius of a god-like mind have made him immortal. His reply to Haines of South Carolina in the United States Senate, his deadly arraignment of the murderers of Captain White at Salem, his defence of the Dartmouth College case, his widely read speech made on March 4, 1850, and his polished, eloquent oration delivered at the dedication of Bunker Hill.

The Civil War. This pathetic struggle—pathetic from many angles—came on as all wars come, gradually and like a thief in the night, unobserved. A female anti-slavery meeting was being held, when it was attacked

by a crowd of unthinking people. The women were insulted. They were broken up in their meeting and their property was damaged. A young man was present who was seized and a rope was coiled about his neck. He published a paper which was bold in its utterances against slavery. The young man had been in Baltimore, where he had seen men, women and children sold at auction like sheep. He had dared to protest and had been arrested. Now the noisy mob were shouting to hang him. One, more thinking than the rest, cried:

"Don't do it. He is an American. He shall not be hurt."

The clothes upon his back were torn from him, and he was saved from further harm by the officers, who hustled him away to jail to get him out of the street.

That young man was William Lloyd Garrison, and at that time he was publishing a little paper called "The Liberator." The society which he had formed became the leader of many others. He devoted his life to talking and working for the slave. In no city where he labored did he get more earnest followers than he did in Boston.

At one time an escaped slave was caught and his owner was furious to get possession of him. The court had ruled that it could not hold him. The spectators became indignant. A mass meeting was called in Faneuil Hall, where speeches were made. Eloquent words were spoken that night. Among the speakers were Wendell Phillips, Theodore Parker, and Dr. Samuel G. Howe. Protests were uttered that should have shamed the most reckless. Burns, the captive, had to be taken from his cell to a ship in the harbor between rows of determined men guarded by the militia. The streets were draped as if in mourning, the bells tolled and the expression was one of intense feeling for the black man.

And this was only one of thousands of cases of this kind. So the bitter speeches and dark feelings ended in war.

The call came for men to put down the rebellion. Governor Andrew answered this by sending to the front the militia, which began to arrive in Baltimore on the 16th. Some of the wealthy men of Boston pledged themselves to support the soldiers' families. The Boston banks offered to loan the state money to meet the expenses of a war. On April 19, a mob attacked the soldiers in the streets of Baltimore and four were killed, the first to fall in the cause.

Palfrey in his excellent work says very truthfully that the cycle of New England events is for eighty-six years. In the spring of 1603 the family of Stuart ascended the throne of England. At the end of eighty-six years, Massachusetts had been betrayed by one of her most eminent men to her enemies, Joseph Dudley, and the people rose and committed their prisoner, the deputy of the Stuart King, to the fort in Boston, which he had built to overawe them. Another eighty-six years passed, and Massachusetts had been betrayed to her enemies by her most trusted citizen, Thomas Hutchinson, when, at Lexington and Concord, on the nineteenth of April, 1775, her farmers struck the first blow in the war of American Independence. Another eighty-six years ensued, and a domination of slave-holders, more odious than that of Stuarts or Guelphs, had been fastened upon her, when, on the nineteenth of April, 1861, the streets of Baltimore were stained by the blood of her soldiers on the way to uphold her liberty and law by the rescue of the national capital.

Governor Andrew of Massachusetts, in summing up what the state had done in the war, said truthfully: "Our volunteers have represented Massachusetts during the year just ended on almost every field and in every department of the army where the flag has been unfurled, at Chancellorsville, Gettysburg, Vicksburg, Port Hudson, and Fort Wagner; at Chickamauga, Knoxville, and Chat-

tanooga; under Hooker, Meade, Banks, Gilmore, Rosecrans, Burnside, and Grant. In every scene of danger and duty—along the Atlantic and the Gulf, on the Tennessee, the Cumberland, the Mississippi, and the Rio Grande; under Dupont, Dahlgren, Foote, Farragut and Porter,—the sons of Massachusetts have borne their part and paid the debt of patriotism and valor.”

Massachusetts sent over 160,000 men into the war. Let me quote you from Butterworth's History of Boston:

“On the high ground of the Common the tall shaft of the Soldiers' and Sailors' Monument shines through the trees; and in the public square from which Columbus Avenue stretches away amid streets and blocks of wealth and state, stands the Emancipation Monument, and all good people look upon them both with patriotic pride as they recall the war record of Boston and Massachusetts.”

From the beginning Massachusetts did her part in every respect. Elected as a Free Soil candidate, Governor Andrew was supported by both political parties, earned for himself the title of “the Great War Governor.” Sixty-seven regiments were furnished by the State, and her portion towards supporting the navy was creditable in proportion to her size as a commercial State. There was no battle of any account in which some Massachusetts regiment did not do her part, and her soldiers sleep now in every state where the war was waged.

Nor were the women backward in doing their part in the war. Her nurses, her teachers, her noble assistants were everywhere found to be doing a grand duty for their country. There was no shirking anywhere.

At home, those who could not go to the front labored faithfully and cheerfully to maintain the army, while the industry never slackened its earnest efforts to afford the capital necessary to meet the expense of the mighty effort to make the country free and one Union. No State en-

joyed the peace earned more than she, for no State did her part in winning the struggle more superbly.

Massachusetts Men in the Civil War. Massachusetts raised in the Civil War sixty regiments of infantry, and was completing the Sixty-First and Sixty-Second regiments when Lee surrendered at Appomattox. She sent into service four regiments of heavy artillery, First Battalion of heavy artillery, six regiments of cavalry, sixteen batteries, Third Battalion of Rifles and two companies of sharpshooters.

Massachusetts sent to the front 159,165 men, or 13,492 more men than the United States government called for. Her men, reckoned on a three years' basis, amounted to 131,116 men. The fatalities were: killed in action, 3,749 men and 9,086 who died from wounds or disease; 15,645 were discharged for disability contracted in the service, while 5,866 not accounted for; at least one-half of these probably died. The state expended on account of the war \$30,162,200.



HENRY WILSON

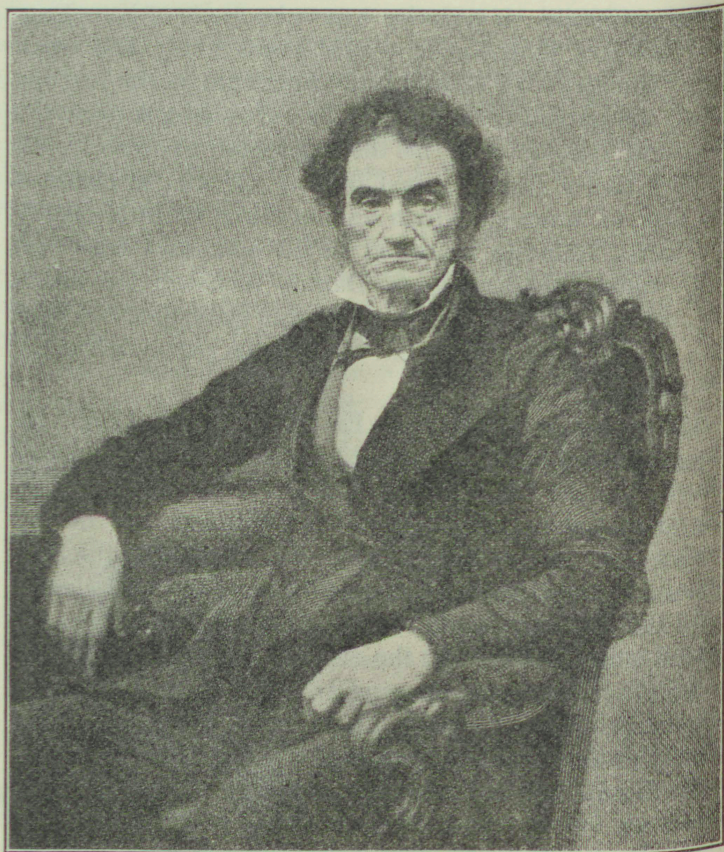
Henry Wilson. Among the remarkable men of New England there is not one whose record outvies that of Henry Wilson. Born in New Hampshire, he served Massachusetts long and ably, and undoubtedly he would have been President had not death cut short his useful career. He was an example of the two extreme ideas which can be met and overcome in a sin-

gle life. Born in poverty, he yet managed to rise above these lowly environments into positions of honor and trust. The lessons learned in youth were never forgotten, but served to guide him through life. He introduced

a bill, which became a law, to suppress the action of ships in dealing with slaves. This business had grown up under the silence of powers that might have stopped it.

Rufus Choate. If a choice was to be made of New England lawyers that choice would most likely fall upon Rufus Choate. We should remember him as the learned jurist, the patriotic statesman, the entrancing orator, the profound scholar and the distinguished advocate. His oratory had a distinguished quality of intense richness and flow of language which he had taken from his study of Cicero. Among his most noted addresses was that given upon the decease of Daniel Webster, by which Edward Everett declared that "he had electrified the land with a burst of eloquence not easily to be paralleled in the line of time."

Rufus Choate was born in Essex October 1, 1799. He was graduated from Dartmouth College in 1819, and was admitted to the bar at Danvers in 1824, but soon after removed to Salem. He was not a politician, but he did serve a term in the State Legislature, another in the Senate, and in the House of Representatives, and was elected to fill out the incompleted term of Daniel Webster in the United States Senate. At the close of this term he retired to the practice of law, opening an office in Boston. As a pleader he had no equal. Apart from his purely legal efforts his fame rested upon half a dozen speeches made in the Senate and elsewhere. Among these may be mentioned an eulogy upon President Harrison in 1841; an address upon the anniversary of the landing of the Pilgrims in 1843; an eulogy upon Daniel Webster in 1853, an address upon the dedication of the Peabody Institute at Danvers in 1858. He died while upon his way to Europe for his health, July 13, 1859. So passed into memory, which is rapidly fading, the story of the greatest jurist Massachusetts ever had.



RUFUS CHOATE

Massachusetts in the European War. War is the father of romantic history. Around it cluster the beginning of most of its achievements. To war therefore we must look for the accomplishment of most of the marked advances in life. The statesmen, the men of peace, arouse the people to a fighting pitch and then leave the soldiers trained in arts of arms to battle it out. This is the grave situation as we must face it coming to a satisfactory explanation.

The World War, or European War, whichever name you care to apply, came at a time when men were talking of peace and looking forward to indefinite years of quietness and freedom from arms. It began in Europe and, though at one time it looked so it might be transplanted to this country, it ended there. Let us hope it will be the last for many years—centuries. As the war-cloud grew darker and darker and the fighting grew fiercer, the unrest of the American people became more intense. Finally, President Wilson declared that war against Germany existed April 6, 1917. Major-General John J. Pershing was made Commander-in-Chief of the proposed American Expeditionary Forces. To receive the troops to be sent him, General Pershing sailed for France May 25, of the same year, accompanied by a staff of 53 officers and 146 men.

The Marines Went First. In June, 1917, four regiments of the Army Regulars and one regiment of Marines were sent overseas. The Marines were commanded by Colonel Charles A. Doyen, a New England man. In September Doyen was made a Brigadier-General of the Fifth and Sixth Regiments as a brigade. He was in command until November 7, when he was obliged to return to the United States on account of ill health, and he died in his New Hampshire home the following spring, an able officer, whose career was cut short before he had fairly begun to show his ability.

Massachusetts Men. As she had done in all previous wars, the Old Bay State was ready and willing to do her part now. It must be remembered that over fifty years had elapsed since the Civil War had ended, and during those years of peace, broken only by the Spanish-American War and border disturbances, nothing had occurred to keep up the fighting qualities of the young men of the age to be fitted for a new struggle.

Into this coming war the six New England states were united in the Twenty-Sixth Division, according to the following plan: The Regular Army was given the numbers from one to twenty-five; the National Guard, which were the state troops in federal service, were given Twenty-Sixth to Seventy-Five inclusive. Above Seventy-Six to One Hundred inclusive included the men who belonged to the miscellaneous departments, as infantry, artillery, and engineer units with the National Guard and National Army divisions commencing with 101 and to 104 inclusive for infantry regiments in the Twenty-Sixth Division, to begin with an extension of this system 101 to 103 for artillery regiments.

Whatever may be said against the troops thus poorly equipped by training was more than offset by the willingness with which they enlisted with the fixed purpose of fighting for their country. The future record of this division showed that the boys answering to its call were an honor to their fathers, grandfathers, and great-grandfathers, all of whom had seen fighting for the same cause for which they were willing to risk life and limb now.

The command of this fine division, which became known as the Yankee Division, was Brigadier General Clarence R. Edwards, a Massachusetts man. This New England body of men we are certain was as fine a division as could be found in the entire army. It was of excellent material physically, with a large proportion of the men who had been in service more than a year, with thou-

sands of recruits who were to learn the leading tactics of soldier life; of a high morale of character, with a large number of skilled mechanics, whatever its limit in its training it was likely and did develop into the highest type of soldier.

The Twenty-Sixth Division was sent to New Chateau, France, September 7, 1917, and was active forty-five days, doing its part in the fall campaign, which wound up with the conquest of the Germans. So, at the end of the arduous campaign, at the end of forty-seven days of continuous battle, the goal had been reached. Pershing's own prophecy that he was going to "consume" the Germans had been fulfilled. Into this sanguinary battle the enemy had hurled every man it could muster to stem the inevitable tide of war. It is perhaps needless to say that the allied powers had done the same. Every available division of the American Army had been called into the battle to crush the foe.

The 76th Division. Not all of the Massachusetts men were in the Twenty-Sixth Division, for some of them went into the Seventy-Sixth Division, which was eventually broken up and its men used as replacement for combat divisions at the front.

The Seventy-Eighth Division. This division was organized at Camp Dix in New Jersey, and quite a number of Massachusetts men were found here. Besides these Massachusetts men were scattered through the army, but wherever found were doing a splendid part in the biggest and most cruel war ever waged.

It must be said the American training had been for open field, while the British and French training had been for the defense. Men murmured against this method, but the wisdom of the American leaders was shown at Cantigny, Belleau Wood and the Aisne-Marne as to the effectiveness of this tactic of war. Pershing had asked for the privilege of following up the first attack

upon the enemy before it could have time to reinforce itself.

St. Mihiel Battle. The reduction of St. Mihiel was strictly an American offensive, and accomplished from September 12 to 16. It was performed wholly under American command and largely by American troops. It was a distinctive honor to officers and men. Pershing had asked permission to capture this, the most difficult sector on the whole front. The credit of this victory belonged to the First and Twenty-Sixth Divisions, which had met at Vigneulles, as planned. From this field the march was taken up towards the Meuse-Argonne, the great and final battle of the war, without any misgivings as to front or rear.

The Meuse-Argonne Offensive. Throughout this long, dark and decisive campaign no division did its duty more earnestly and bravely than the Twenty-Sixth. Ending after forty-seven days of continuous fighting, the goal of this stupendous battle had been reached. Pershing had proved the truth of his words that the "Germans would be consumed." Into this sanguinary struggle the enemy had hurled every atom of man power and every grain of ammunition to stem the inevitable tide of war. It is perhaps needless to say that the allied powers had not been unconscious of the part it was acting. Every available division of the American Army had been called into the battle to crush the enemy.

Removal of General Edwards. To one not familiar with the rules of war it seems strange that a man who had organized and trained his men, and who had their unbounded confidence, should be removed in the midst of a critical battle. But such was the case of General Edwards, who was removed just as his services seemed most needed. The officer's order for his removal to a department at home in the army, without any complaint as to neglect or failure to perform his part in the service,

came October 22, but he held his command until the 24th, when General Frank E. Bamford succeeded him.

The Meuse River Campaign. On the 26th of September, 1918, the first American Army took the place of the Second French Army, and it began a series of attacks upon the Germans stationed in the valley of the River Meuse, which was destined to lead to what was beyond doubt the greatest battle ever fought by American troops. There have been few, if any, greater battles in the history of the world. The object of the attack was to seize the Sedan-Mezieres Railroad, which afforded the main line of transportation of the supplies of the German forces. To break this situation the entire position of the enemy would be endangered and changed. Behind this front lay the Briey iron fields, which the Germans could not afford to lose. Both sides realized the importance of the result and they threw into it all of the power they possessed.

Wilderness and Meuse-Argonne. The great strategical battle of the World War has been compared with that great battle of the Civil War fought from May 5 to May 12, 1864. Both were fought over a rugged terrain covered with masses of undergrowth and wildwood, where progress was slow and the hazard greater. The Wilderness was the longest and most hotly contested battle under difficult resistance during that war. The casualty list was very heavy.

In comparison the battle of the Meuse-Argonne hung in the balance six days, where the other continued one; twelve men fought in the Forest of the Argonne where one man continued the struggle in the Virginian Wilderness. The Americans used in this European battle ten times as many guns, and one hundred times as many rounds of ammunition. The list of casualties was four hundred times as great as in the Battle of the Wilderness.

The Armistice. Too late the Germans had learned their mistake in arousing that people across the sea, who were largely accountable for the success of the three Allied offensives—Aisne-Marne, St. Mihiel and the last and greatest, the Meuse-Argonne. So there came the armistice and the settlement, which we hope ended war for many years, if not forever.

CHAPTER XIV

THE STORY OF EDUCATION

The story of education is at once one of the most difficult to follow and yet one of the proudest in our history. The Old Bay State has reason to be proud of hers. While knowing the need of acquiring knowledge, it could not have been expected of the Pilgrims to begin to teach their children very early in their days of trying adventure and hardships.

The public school system is based on an ordinance passed in 1647, which said: "Now that learning may not be buried in the graves of our fathers, every township in this jurisdiction, after the Lord has increased them to fifty householders, shall then forthwith appoint one within the town to teach all such children as shall resort to him, to write and read."

An Earlier Law. It should be said, however, that in 1642 the General Court of Massachusetts Bay passed a law which said that every child should be educated. There was no mention of a school in the law and no penalty was imposed, providing the parent did not follow the law.

Within five years, 1752, the ordinance was passed which made it obligatory for the parents to see that their children were educated. In every town where there were one hundred householders a grammar school should be kept. This law was in force until 1789. So within thirty years of the landing of the Pilgrims the school system, which began with a college, was complete with its three grades of schools.

The function of the Grammar School was to prepare pupils for the college and the college for the ministry,

which at this date was the first motive for an education. Education was now compulsory and free, though each town was given authority to say if the school should be supported by a tax or by the parents.

Law of 1789. Up to 1789 the care of the schools had been left to the Selectmen. Then school committees were chosen and towns were divided into school districts. But it was not until 1800 these districts were given power to act separately. The towns paid the money raised by taxation over to the school districts the money these bodies had voted. In 1817 these districts were incorporated and could build schoolhouses and hold personal property.

First Returns. School committees were asked to make returns, but few complied, and many of these reports were so meager that great dissatisfaction grew out of this system. The houses were often unfit to occupy. Some of the teachers were not qualified to teach.

A Revolution in School Affairs. So matters drifted along in a haphazard sort of manner until 1837. At this time a few men with more far-seeing vision proposed a change, a change that was considered a revolution by many of the more conservative members of the educational leaders. Believing it was against the liberal ideas of the town meeting and the ideas of a free government, there was no centralized municipal school organization. The old-time school committees were generally intelligent men, careful in their conduct of affairs, but very jealous of allowing strangers within their circles.

In 1837 the state of Massachusetts stepped in and established a State Board of Education, and Horace Mann, its leading supporter, was appointed its Secretary. The office was new and naturally many opposed the step. Nowhere was it more violently opposed than by the Boston schoolmasters. Earnest and energetic in his efforts, the new Secretary went up and down in the state uphold-

ing his movement and offering plans to improve the schools as they then existed. Naturally he aroused the enmity of the Boston school men. This called forth a vigorous reply from him and a public discussion was soon before the people.

Let us see what the condition was at this time. The schools were supposed to be under the management of a School Board, but this committee was not responsible for the administration of the schools. There was no supervision, as we understand the term, nor any school system. The committee looked after the building of the houses, arranged certain rules and regulations and hired the masters to carry them out. Once a year a formal inspection of the schools was made and a brief report was given. These examinations grew more complex, year by year, as the schools grew larger, until in 1845 they were quite useless. This marks the beginning of a new era in school education. Horace Mann, in replying to the report, has this to say, referring to the schools of Boston:

"In no city in the world has there been one-half so much pecuniary liberality for the maintenance of Common Schools as in the city of Boston. In no city of the world have the generous appropriations made in behalf of the schools been seconded and advocated by the citizens with so great a degree of unanimity. In no city in the world have the wealthy made so little clamor or opposition in regard to the great fundamental principle of Republicanism,—that the property of the country must secure the education of the country."

After comparing the sums raised by Boston with the money raised by all of England, which finally secured £40,000 against \$212,000 by Boston, he ended by saying:

"This money is not raised to be squandered on place-holders, but by a glorious alchemy to be transmuted into intelligence, good feeling, and good habits."

This was like a thorn to the school committee, and when the time came for the annual inspection greater effort and expense than ever was undertaken to find all the good that could be found. This report, if it woefully showed the inefficiency of the schools, was honestly published, and it afforded Horace Mann a cutting weapon with which to reply. He did not take advantage of his opportunity, but published the report in full in the Common School Journal, of which he was editor, and had its effect upon the school men and the public. Very few school men had the faculty to grasp the situation at once, as Horace Mann did, and it was fifty years before the masses began to comprehend it.

First Normal School in America. No one worked any harder than James G. Carter in behalf of the professional education of teachers. He drafted the bill for a Board of Education, which became a law in April, 1837. At the same session of the Legislature Horace Mann, who had been chosen Secretary of the new board, introduced a bill into the Legislature by which the State should raise ten thousand dollars, providing a like sum should be paid by subscription, towards founding a State Teachers' Seminary. This bill passed both the House and Senate unanimously, and a discussion began as to what kind of a school this should be. New York had fitting departments in some of their schools with the intention of fitting persons to teach. The outcome of this talk was the establishment at Lexington and another at Barre of two normal schools. These schools were opened in 1839, and Governor Edward Everett was the orator of the day.

The credit of establishing these schools, the one at Lexington being opened in June, 1839, belonged mainly to Horace Mann and Cyrus Pierce. Mr. Mann sacrificed every other motive in life, a good law practice, political hopes and all to devote himself exclusively to the improvement in the schools. He threw his very heart and

soul into his chosen vocation for twelve years, doing what it seems doubtful if another man could have done. His faithful co-worker and associate was Cyrus Pierce, who taught in the Lexington school as soon as it was opened in 1839. It has been said that "Poets are born, not made," and this fact belongs fully as much to teachers as it does to any other calling. The purpose of the Normal School is to start them right. Mr. Pierce possessed an uncanny power to do this correctly.

We wish the expression of Mr. Pierce to his wife on the morning he was to start to Lexington to take charge of the school: "I had rather die than fail," might be the motto of every pupil who undertakes a purpose in this life.

As successful as these schools proved, great objections were made against them by those who could not be convinced. The Legislature for 1840 witnessed a bitter attack upon them. The substance of the objection is shown in the following item taken from their report:

"If the board (of Education) has any actual power it is a dangerous power, trenching directly upon the rights and duties of the Legislature; if it has no power, why continue its existence at an annual expense to the Commonwealth?"

The change for better was due largely to the efforts of two men; I might say three men. The first of these was James G. Carter, who worked through the Legislature for better laws, and Horace Mann for his efforts for carrying out the provisions of the new laws. The third person was Cyrus Pierce, the master mind in applying the Normal method towards preparing teachers to fill their posts of duty. Massachusetts owes these men a debt she can never pay. With such leaders the idea could not fail.

Carter's Plans. The improvement in the school system as planned by Mr. Carter was, first, a State school fund,

to help out the towns; second, a State School Board of Education; third, a Seminary for teachers. The first of these was secured in 1834 by an appropriation of one million dollars from the sale of land in Maine. This sum was doubled a few years later, though an added burden was made when the State should establish State institutions. In 1837 the State Board of Education was established. The duty of this board was to give out information in regard to the schools. In 1839 three Normal Schools were established at Lexington, Barre and Bridgewater.

Mann's Efforts. Mann, in his reports to the Board of Education and the Common School Journal, pointed out four shortcomings in the school system. One of these was the inferior quality of the schoolhouses. A second cause was lack of supervision. The officials failed to give the situation sufficient attention. The third was lack of the ability of the teachers to meet the needs of the occasion, and fourth, the non-attendance of the pupils. He showed that forty-two thousand children did not go to school at all. He criticised the text books then in use and the method of using them. His efforts were not in vain. Each of these criticisms brought a certain improvement.

Bitter Opposition. As might have been expected, Horace Mann met with bitter opposition at every step he took. His political views did not suit a portion of the people. His religion was another objection. He was a Unitarian, and the Orthodox people believed or feared he might influence his religion into the schools.

Schools of Today. In the evidence of the condition of the schools in 1845, the teachers of today should feel proud of the success that has been gained. This is not saying they are perfect today, for we know they are far from it. But we sincerely believe, judging by the past, they will continue to grow and improve, year by year.

It was no stranger that the school men of Boston seventy-five years ago should have opposed the system of their day than it is to see opposition today to many of the things that are being done. We find by comparison that the following results have been won:

School Government. We have now a Superintendent, who is the responsible head of the system. He must know the number of children there are in his jurisdiction, according to the School Census, and must know that they attend the number of weeks required by law, which is looked after by the Attendance Officers. He must provide suitable buildings and grounds, which is attended to by the Supervisor of Property, and he must equip them and keep them stocked by the Purchasing Agent.

There must be janitors and engineers to keep the grounds and buildings in proper condition. The Superintendent must provide suitable teachers qualified and trained each for his particular class. The pupils must be measured physically, mentally, and sorted into different classes, groups or grades, and a special course of study laid out for each group. Arrangements must be made for keeping the records of each child's progress.

Children must be assisted in the selection of their choice of occupation. All of these require some select department, and cost money. Teachers must not only be trained at the outset, but kept in continuous training to keep them fitted for the changing scenes that are taking place. Then, provisions must be made to take care of the teachers in their old age. Co-operation must be kept with other schools and no really successful teacher will allow himself to fall behind his associates. So the system has grown up from a simple beginning to its perplexing importance of today.

A Backward Glance. A backward glance along the lines of progress shows very clearly the advance that has been made in our school conduct. This glance also shows

the extreme foolishness displayed by those at the head seventy-five years ago. To Horace Mann and his associates we owe a great debt. Surely they must have builded better than they knew. In the progress which has been made we can see promise of yet greater advance in the future. The contribution of the past is no uncertain factor in helping on the cause in the years to come.

Higher Education. The first settlers in Massachusetts realized the importance of a higher education than could be obtained from the common schools. So they began at once to make the foundation for a university. As the leading thought and purpose in life was the avowed object of fitting one's self for religion, the object of this higher school was the ministry. Though numbering scarcely four thousand persons, the means came within their reach before they had barely fitted themselves to acquire their spiritual wants. In the autumn of 1636, less than six years after the landing of the Puritans, the General Court of Massachusetts made the first move towards establishing this school. It voted to give four hundred pounds for the founding of a school or college. As small as this sum looks today, it was a generous assignment in that day. The next court decided to locate the college at "New Towne," as the place selected was then known. A few months later this name was changed to Cambridge, for the college town in England by that name. It was believed this would lend dignity to the purpose.

Harvard College. Fortune seemed to favor the idea. In 1637 Reverend John Harvard, a Nonconformist minister, who had been graduated from Cambridge, England, in 1635, came to New England. He was a man highly beloved by the people. He became interested in the devout purpose of his associates. As his health was failing him, he gave one-half of his estate and his valuable library of 320 volumes, towards the work of car-

rying out the intention of building the college. During 1637 work was begun upon the new college, which had been named Harvard College. The site of the new enterprise was a strip of land three acres in width bordering on the bank of a "pleasant river." The directors were fortunate in selecting Reverend Henry Dunster as the first President of Harvard in 1640. All accounts of him agree in saying that he was of a remarkably pure character and of profound scholarship.

In a comparison of the Harvard College of 1642 and its present outlook we can see the difference in educational thought and enterprise. The position which the university occupies today indicates very plainly the change which has followed in the civilization of that day now almost three hundred years later. Harvard is no longer an institution of the State nor is she under the control of any religious sect. She has broadened her field of activity and lengthened the scope of her instruction.

Higher Education for Women. Before 1836 Massachusetts had given a charter to but two schools for girls only. One of these was Ipswich Academy in 1828, and the other Abbot Academy in 1829. In 1836 Mount Holyoke Seminary was chartered February 11. Again March 8, 1838, this was chartered as Mount Holyoke Seminary and College, designed to secure permanent facilities for the higher education for young women, just as young men had been favored for two hundred years.

The first academy in New England was chartered in 1823 and opened in the Adams Academy at Derry, N. H. In Waterford, New York, as early as 1820 Mrs. Emma Willard, who had taught school and written a treatise upon "A Plan to Improve Woman's Education," had been invited to go to that state and open a school.

Governor Clinton induced the Legislature to pass a law "to give female academies a share of the literary

fund." This was probably the first law of this kind passed by any legislative body. Mrs. Willard taught in Troy, New York, eighteen years. The year before she resigned her position Miss Catherine Fiske died in Keene, New Hampshire, where she had taught school for young women for twenty-three years. It is said that more than 2,500 in all had received her instructions in Watts on the mind, botany, chemistry, astronomy and other studies.

In Hartford, Connecticut, Miss Catherine Beecher had been at the head of an academy where as many as one hundred and sixty girls were taught at a single term. Among other branches taught were the art of composition, history, Latin and rudiments of the art of teaching.

While these educators were doing their work in different states, Reverend Joseph Emerson had been molding the intellectual and moral character of young women in his seminary at Byfield and Saugus from 1818 to 1824. He had been a tutor in Harvard College and believed in educating young women on the same lines as young men and he laid out a three years' course of study. Among those who had experience under him were Miss Grant, who became principal of the Adams Academy at Derry, N. H., and Mary Lyon, of whom we are going to hear from again.

At the time of the charter of the Mount Holyoke Seminary in 1836 there were one hundred twenty colleges for young men in the country, but not one for young women. Unable to carry out their plans at Derry, New Hampshire, where in 1824 were given out the first six diplomas ever given to women as far as we know, Miss Grant went back to Ipswich and Miss Lyon had a project of her own which she hoped to carry out successfully elsewhere.

Mary Lyon. Born in Buckland, Mary Lyon had taught school for twenty years with success. But her experi-

ence gained in Byfield, Derry, New Hampshire, and in a school of her own at Buckland, she left Ipswich with a determination to found a permanent institution for "the training of young women for the greatest usefulness." She was a woman of large mind and heart, supported with ardent piety and unconquerable faith. Her purpose was to erect buildings, furnish them, suitable to accommodate two hundred pupils, with proper school apparatus, all of which would cost thirty thousand dollars. Finally the money was raised in small sums and the work carried forward to its completion. All honor to the brave woman who conceived it and had faith in its ultimate fruition. At Holyoke, her school is still flourishing.

Parochial Schools. A law was passed in 1855 that made the reading of the Bible compulsory in the schools, but this was dropped later on in its intent if not by fact. At this time there were only a few Parochial schools in the State, but after 1884 the Baltimore Council declared its purpose to educate its own pupils. From that time parochial schools have increased at a rapid rate.

Massachusetts a Leader. So Massachusetts has led the United States in the matter of a popular education. The Puritan idea of an educational education has come to pass. It is general, free and compulsory. There must be no fee for school attendance, and it must be paid for out of taxation. When it was found that parents in exceedingly poor circumstances wanted to put their children to work in factories, or in such places where they could earn something towards a living, it was a temptation hard to resist, until a law was made which obliged them to keep their children in school at least twelve weeks in a year. This was made the law in 1854, and the period of school has been extended to thirty weeks since. The child could not escape this law while he was between eight and fourteen years of age. In 1826 a law

was passed which said the State should furnish books to the extremely poor, but in 1884 this was made to apply to all children. So we have a complete exhibition of the Puritan idea.

School Books. Prior to the Revolution, text books by American authors were very few and not attractive. In the early colonial days the pupils had only a Primer, a Psalter, Testament and Bible. Among the early authors of text books Ezekiel Cheever stands high. He taught school for several years in New Haven, Connecticut, and then came to Boston, where he was head of the Boston Latin School for almost forty years.

He prepared for use in Latin a work he called "A Short Introduction to the Latin Tongue." This was first published in 1645 and was in use as late as 1838. A faithful Puritan, he never failed to teach his pupils the truth of the Gospel as he saw it.

The beginner's book in all Colonial schools was the New England Primer. Coote's English School Master was first published in 1606. But among the really practical spelling books for its day was Dillworth's.

Arithmetic was usually taught with text books. An early book on this subject was Cocker's Arithmetic. Then came Hodder's, and finally Greenleaf's Progressive Arithmetics. Though the binding of these Colonial school books was in leather, the printed editions done in New England was always poor. It was not until the beginning of the 19th century that these books were at all inviting. Fifty years has made a wonderful difference not only in the quantity but in the general appearance of books used in schools. Perhaps there has been no greater improvement in these than there has been in the methods of teaching instructions.

Amherst College. This finely situated college is in the town of Amherst in the Connecticut valley. It is a Congregationalist institution, and has a fine art gallery. It

was founded in 1821 and has a memorial chapel, gymnasium, observatory, a good collection of Indian relics and the second largest exhibit of casts from famous statuary in America. Connected with her professorship of physical education is a park of 26 acres. She has a beautiful library of over 50,000 volumes.

Boston University. This institute was founded in 1869, and is devoted to arts, music, agriculture and schools of law, a Methodist theology, medicine and all sciences.

Clark University. This college was founded at Worcester in 1888. Its purpose was to specialize in the higher studies of the graduates of colleges and universities.

Williams College. Named in honor of that pioneer patriot who lost his life at the battle on Lake George in 1755, and founded by the fund he had left in his will for that purpose. It was chartered in 1793. It was here that was the birthplace of foreign Christian mission in America.

Tufts College. Tufts College, of Universalist faith, and situated on a commanding hill in Medford, is an honor to the town. It is rich in its philosophical, classical and engineering and theological courses.

Massachusetts Institute of Technology. This institute, one of the most famous and successful in the country, is located in Boston, and was incorporated in 1861. It occupies several fine buildings on Back Bay, and teaches architecture, engineering, chemistry, physics, natural history and mechanic arts in four-year courses.

The Agricultural College. This is a state institution founded in 1863 at Amherst. It has students in scientific farming, horticulture and forestry. The state has about one hundred scholarships and there are thirteen Congressional scholarships.

Wellesley College. A few miles out of Boston in the town of Wellesley, in the midst of a park of three hun-

dred acres, is the college which bears its name. This was founded in 1871 by Henry F. Durant and was opened four years later. This is a young women's college and has students from all parts of the Union. It has an art gallery, museums and a library of over twenty-five thousand volumes.

Smith College. Founded in 1871 by Miss Sophia Smith of Northampton. This institution has a twelve-foot equatorial telescope, with a four-inch meridian circle and twenty-one foot steel dome.

Andover Theological Institution. This Congregational institute was opened in 1808, and has students from all over the world. It has a library of over fifty thousand volumes. In this town stands the house in which "Gates Ajar" was written, and the site of the house in which "Uncle Tom's Cabin" was written.

Newton Theological Institution. This is a Baptist school, founded in 1825. This stands on a hill overlooking Newton Centre, and is only eight miles out of Boston. The author of the national song, "My Country, 'Tis of Thee I Sing," Mr. Reverend Doctor S. F. Smith, lived here.

The Episcopal Theological School. This is in Cambridge, near Harvard University, and is an attractive place. This school was founded in 1867.

Parochial Schools. The leading Catholic schools are the Boston College, founded by the Jesuits in 1863, and the College of the Holy Cross standing on a hilltop overlooking the city of Worcester. In Brighton is a stone building holding the diocesan seminary for the Catholic clergy.

Moody School. A native of Massachusetts, the celebrated evangelist, Dwight I. Moody, founded in Northfield a group of Christian schools, with pupils from all over the world. Here is a woman's training school for Bible study, dressmaking and housekeeping.

Boston English High. The largest building in the world used for a free public school was built in Boston in 1870-80. It is a fireproof structure and has forty-eight rooms, besides museums, libraries, gymnasiums, lecture hall and a great drill hall, for military instructions.

The Girls' High School is a magnificent building holding nearly a thousand pupils. Overlooking the city of Fall River is the B. M. C. Durfee High School, a memorial building. Springfield, Worcester and other of the big cities have beautiful high schools and collections.

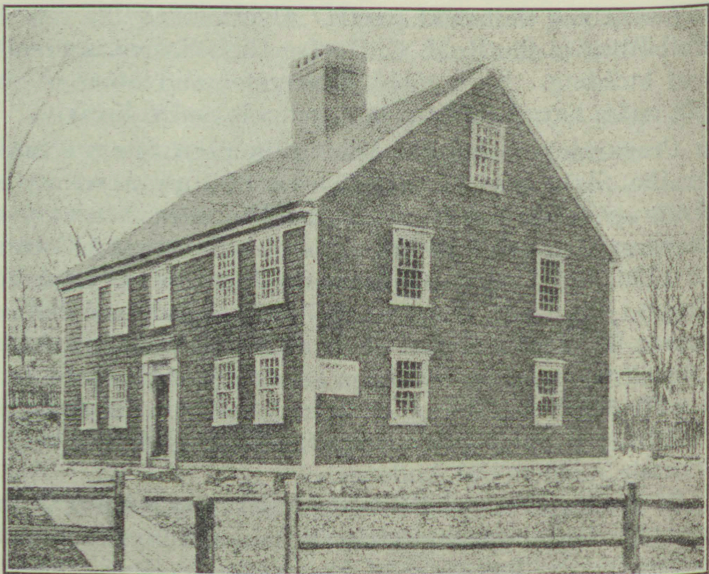
Preparatory Schools. Among the preparatory schools in the State are the well-known Phillips Academy at Andover, endowed in 1778, the Dummer Academy at Newbury, founded and endowed by Governor Dummer in 1756; the Thayer Academy of Braintree; Dean Academy at Franklin; Greylock Institute at South Williamstown; St. Mark's School at Southborough; Adams Academy at Quincy; the Williston Seminary at Easthampton; Lasell Academy at Auburndale; Sanderson Academy at Ashfield; Bradford Academy for girls; and the Abbott Female Academy at Andover.

In Boston is one of the best preparatory schools in the world, where boys and girls are taken from the kindergarten to the threshold of business or college. This is the Chauncy Hall School, founded in 1828.

Wesleyan Academy. A notable New England institution was founded in 1818, and in 1825 was moved to the pleasant old Massachusetts village at Wilbraham. It has remained here, growing in interest and good work ever since. There are six academic buildings, on a territory of two hundred acres on the slopes to the east of the Connecticut River. Many noted men have graduated from this institution.

Allen's Classical School. Another celebrated New England Academy is Allen's West Newton English and

Classical School. This school occupies a building of no less historic interest than where, in 1844, was taught the first Normal School in America and the first school for young women in the world. Nathaniel T. Allen became connected with it in 1848, and after the Normal School had been removed to Framingham he opened here a pri-



HOWLAND HOUSE IN PLYMOUTH

vate school for boys and girls, which has continued to flourish until the present date. It is now owned and managed by Reverend Thomas Chalmers. It has a hundred students and a spacious farm and industrial annex in the town of Medfield. This school has been conducted on safe principles. One of its aims has been to study the ancestry of each pupil, and ascertain what influence has been brought to bear upon his life. It has tried to repress all evil hereditaries which may have come into

the lives of those who come hither for their training. So widely known has it become that students come from over the country and from Europe. The list of graduates is both long and ornamented with famous names.

Men of Letters. The Old Bay State has been very fortunate in her list of literary men. Taking these men at random, we will begin with Theodore Parker, born at Lexington in 1810. He was a prodigy of learning and noted for his industry. He excelled as a preacher and as an author. He died in Florence in 1860. An even greater man was William Ellery Channing, who was born at Newport, Rhode Island, in 1780. Small in stature, he was an invalid most of his life, but untiring in his literary industry. His style was charming, while he was a finished orator. He published in 1828 his "Remarks Upon the Life and Character of Napoleon," which won for him by its charm of language a European reputation. He was an earnest opponent of slavery and never lost an opportunity to express his opinion. Channing died in 1842, and his works consist of six volumes.

Richard Henry Dana. Born in 1787, Richard Henry Dana studied at Harvard and was associated with a club of gentlemen under the lead of William Tudor, who established *The North American Review* in 1815. His most famous poem was "The Buccaneer," which appeared in 1827. His prose works are worthy of being compared to the British poets of his day. Charles Sprague, who always lived in Boston, wrote some admirable articles. Samuel Woodworth is remembered by his poem "The Old Oaken Bucket."

William Cullen Bryant. We now come to one who outranks them all as far as his ability is concerned. He began to write at the age of ten and at fourteen he brought out a couple of political poems, which were so good no one would believe he was the author. A new edition brought out in 1809 had a certificate to that effect.

He attended Williams College, and in 1816 he published his celebrated poem "Thanatopsis," which showed that a New England poet greater than any who had preceded him had come to the front.

Having decided to take up belles-lettres as an occupation, Bryant moved to New York, where he entered upon a journalistic career, to become finally editor of the *Evening Post*, a Democratic and Free Trade Journal, which position he held until his death. Lacking in humor and with restricted sympathies, he wrote in his happiest vein when calling upon nature for his inspiration. His best examples of this kind are "Green River," "To a Waterfowl," "Death of the Flowers," and the "Evening Wind." Though Bryant's life was closely associated with New York, his poetry was wholly New England. He was not a rapid writer. His poems appeared in 1840, another collection in 1844, and "Thirty Poems" in 1864. His poetic style was always correct, without any show of affectation. He was connected with the *Evening Post* for fifty years, during which time he, by his honest and gentlemanly conduct, raised the standard of the tone of journalism in New York. He was born at Cummington November 3, 1794, and died June 12, 1878.

Henry Wadsworth Longfellow. The second of the five leading poets of America was born in Portland, Maine, February 27, 1807. His name was Henry Wadsworth Longfellow, the son of a prosperous family. He graduated from Bowdoin College, in the same class with Nathaniel Hawthorne, the leading prose writer of the country. Like Bryant, he had selected the law as his profession, but when he was nineteen he was offered the professorship of modern language at Bowdoin, a position he accepted. In fitting himself for this position he spent three years in Europe. He served here from 1829 to 1835, when he resigned and entered the chair of mod-

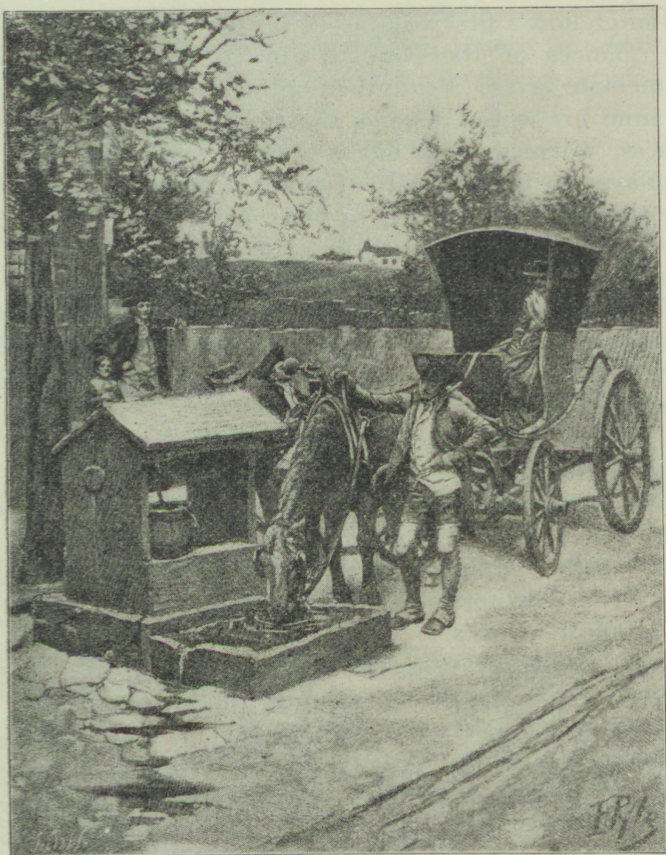
ern languages at Harvard, a position he held until 1854, when he retired to the stately old house which Washington had occupied, when he was in Cambridge, for his headquarters in 1775.

Longfellow's first volume of poems appeared in 1839, the "Voices of the Night," which was received with immediate favor. From then on he published from time to time his works, always showing the grace and cleverness, warmed by a closer human sympathy than is displayed by the majority of eminent poets. To mention the titles of his works is to place before the mind's eye familiar poems, among them "The Psalm of Life," "The Reaper and the Flowers," "The Skeleton in Armor," "The Village Blacksmith," "Evangeline," "Hiawatha," "Courtship of Miles Standish," "Tales of the Wayside Inn," and others no more easily forgotten. He died March 24, 1882.

The few prose works Longfellow gave us deserve to rank with the highest of American books. Almost all of his published works show an intimate acquaintance with foreign literature. His Dante, upon which he spent thirty years, is a faithful translation of the original. You will not miss anything if you read and study Longfellow's works.

John Greenleaf Whittier. Following closely upon the record of Longfellow we come to the poor boy born of Quaker parentage, who was destined to rival the leading American poets. John Greenleaf Whittier had poorer prospects at the outset, and he won his way by persistent energy. He did manage to round out his local education by two years at an academy. He became early interested in the matter of slavery, and many of his poems refer to this subject. He became connected with journalism in Boston in 1829, afterwards changing to Hartford, Haverhill, Philadelphia and Washington. He was one of the founders of the American Anti-Slavery Society of Phila-

delphia. His first collection of poems appeared in 1831 under the title of "Legends of New England." "His Voices of Freedom," in 1841, contained many poems of

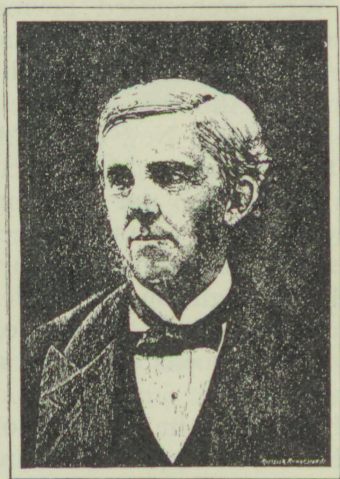


THE WELL BY THE SIDE OF THE ROAD

fire and inspiration. His poem, published in 1863, "In War-Time," gave him a popularity he could not have hoped to meet in subjects that appealed to only a portion of the public.

After the war he turned his attention to gentler subjects, and he published successively in 1865, "Snow-Bound," a genuine New England idyl, which cannot die. In 1867, "The Tent on the Beach"; in 1868, "Among the Hills"; 1870, "Miriam"; 1872, "The Pennsylvanian"; in 1874, "Hazel Blossoms"; in 1878, "The Vision of Echard." Maud Muller is probably his most noted poem, though his "School-House" stands without an equal as a lyrical poem. "Barbara Frietchie" has been the most discussed of any of his war poems. As a prose writer he has shown grace and beauty in two volumes. He was born December 17, 1807, and died September 7, 1892.

Oliver Wendell Holmes.



OLIVER WENDELL HOLMES

Oliver Wendell Holmes was born in a historic house in Cambridge in 1809. He graduated from Harvard College at twenty, and, like Bryant, Longfellow and Lowell he started out as a lawyer, but soon changed to medicine, and he taught the branch relating to anatomy at Harvard. His lyrical ability is not surpassed by any of our poets. His reputation for humor detracted somewhat from his reputation as a writer of feeling. Among

his leading poems are "The Last Leaf," a poem of great pathos; "The Deacon's Masterpiece," and "Homesick in Heaven."

Dr. Holmes has shown himself a master prose writer. One of the founders of *The Atlantic Monthly*, he did more towards its first success than anyone else by the publication of "The Autocrat of the Breakfast Table," which

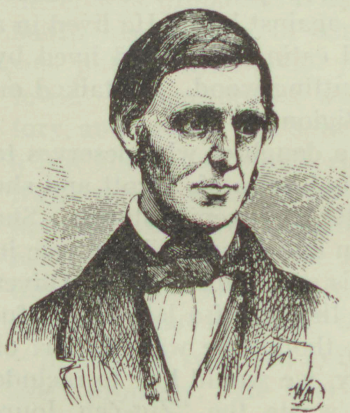
was instantly successful. These articles he followed with the "Professor at the Breakfast Table," of similar style. He wrote two novels which were a credit to him.

James Russell Lowell. The fifth of the Massachusetts poets, all of whom came at the same time, was James Russell Lowell. He was born in Cambridge February 22, 1819, the son of a Congregational minister. He graduated from Harvard in 1838, and two years later opened a law office in Boston. He soon gave this up and devoted himself to literature. He published his first volume of poetry in 1841, but it was not until 1844 that he brought out a collection which afforded him satisfaction. Like most of the poets of his day, he was opposed to slavery, and this work had several very pronounced poems against the custom. Other books followed this, but he was not as prolific as Longfellow. A volume brought out in 1845 gave him considerable distinction as a poet. The same year he also had published in New York "A Fable for Critics," which contained a clever characterization of the leading authors of the day, not omitting himself. The first series of the Bigelow Papers, a collection of poems in Yankee dialect, by an assumed author, "Hosea Bigelow," ornamented with high-sounding notes and introduction by "Homer Wilbur, A. M., pastor of the First Church in Jaalam." These books gave him a reputation in England.

Mr. Lowell succeeded Mr. Longfellow in the chair of polite letters at Harvard, and in 1869 he published another collection of his poems under the title of the leading poem, "Under the Willows." The foremost literary result of the Civil War was a Commemorative Ode of the Harvard men killed in the war. He was editor of the *Atlantic Monthly* and the *North American Review*, where he did considerable literary work. He was Minister to England, 1880-1884, and died August 21, 1891.

Emerson and the Concord Authors. A descendant of eight generations of clergymen, Ralph Waldo Emerson

was born in Boston, and graduated from Harvard in 1821. He became a Unitarian minister, but after three years in the pulpit he retired, being too radical in his ideas for that religion. After a short trip to Europe he began his career as a lecturer, in which he was very successful. In 1838 he delivered before the divinity school of Cambridge a lecture which made him famous.



RALPH WALDO EMERSON

The Dial became the organ of this school of thought in forming the Transcendental school, with Margaret Fuller, Thoreau, Alcott, and Emerson as contributors. Two series of essays appeared from Emerson entitled "Representative Men," in 1841 and 1844, and in 1860 a course of lectures, "Representative Men," and in 1856, "English Traits," "The Conduct of Life in 1860," "Society and Solitude" in 1870, and in 1876 "Letters and Social Aims," in which year a carefully revised collection of his poems was published. His influence became spontaneous. In 1838 he published his first book, "Nature," which required eleven years to sell five hundred copies. But the year following its publication he delivered an address before the Phi Beta Kappa society on the "American Scholar" which electrified the people. It was as Lowell said: "An event without any former parallel in our literary annals, a scene to be always treasured in the memory for its picturesqueness and its inspiration." Emerson was born May 25, 1803, and died April 27, 1882.

A. Bronson Alcott. From Connecticut came Amos Bronson Alcott to join this group at Concord. Alcott had

taught school at Cheshire, Connecticut, and after coming to Massachusetts he also taught on a queer idea of his own in Boston, where he believed in allowing the pupils to punish him when they had disobeyed the rules of the school. It is said this method of inflicting punishment worked very well. He published a work on the Gospel which made him unpopular. This, with the fact that he insisted in admitting colored pupils into his school aroused conservative opinion against him. He lived in a very simple manner, stopped eating meat and lived by working in his garden and cutting wood. He talked on philosophy, education and religion.

Louisa M. Alcott. He had a daughter who deserves to be mentioned. Her name was Louisa M. Alcott and she won undying fame as a writer of juvenile stories. She was the author of "Little Men and Women," a classic in that line of literature. At this same time we had Oliver Optic and Horatio Alger, Jr., though of a less successful order of fiction. In this list, though he was no part of the Brookside Farm company, we would like to include Hezekiah Butterworth. He wrote the "Zig-Zag Journeys," twenty-odd volumes, and he was an ideal gentleman to meet.

Margaret Fuller. Among others attracted to Brookside was Sarah Margaret Fuller, who was considered in her time the most intellectual woman in America. She entered earnestly into many causes, such as intemperance, anti-slavery, and the higher education of woman. She was for a time literary editor of the New York Tribune, and she edited for a time "The Dial." In 1846 she went to Europe and took part in the revolutionary movement of Mazzini. In 1847 she married a poor Italian nobleman, the Marquis Ossoli. Returning with him and her child to America in 1850, all three were drowned when they were wrecked on Fire Island beach. Her writings relating to subjects of the day have failed to become permanent.

Nathaniel Hawthorne. Coming to Concord too late to become of the assembly known as the Brookside Authors, was Nathaniel Hawthorne, the novelist. He lived at the old "Manse" and later at "The Wayside." Of a shy nature, it is doubtful if he would have mixed well with the others. He was an idealist and an author, probably the greatest this country has had. His greatest novel was probably "The Scarlet Letter," which established his position in American literature. This book was published in 1850, just before its author left the town. He had been a worshipper of New England history, and against this dark background he had introduced a few characters which stand out in bold relief. It has tragic power and a grasp of elementary passions of human nature and its insight into the secrets of the human heart, so it becomes the greatest novel yet produced in this country. This was followed by "The Blithedale Romance," "Marble Faun," the "House of Seven Gables."

In 1852 he removed to Concord and bought the "Wayside" property. He was living here when his college-mate and old-time friend, President Franklin Pierce, appointed him Consul to Liverpool, where he spent seven years. "Marble Faun" was the result of this residence abroad, which is abundant in its descriptive beauty. He wrote two admirable books for children, "The Wonder Book" and "Tanglewood Tales." These are not a complete list of this author's works, and there is no American author more worthy of study than Nathaniel Hawthorne. His son Julian wrote a very good biography of him, and was himself no mean author.

Thoreau is another we ought to mention among the Massachusetts literary celebrities, a recluse who wrote "Waldon," "Excursions," "Week on the Concord and Merrimack Rivers," "The Maine Woods," etc. The little village of Concord has done more for American literature than the city of New York. The men who made this

place famous now sleep in Sleepy Hollow. The rude bridge which arched the flood in the days of the early Revolution has been replaced by a new structure, and in place of the Minute Man lives a figure which is forever still. Only memory lives of those bygone days.

William H. Prescott. Passing from the field of imaginative literature we come to a small party of men who have made the history of our country glorious. The oldest of these was William Hickling Prescott, born in 1796 and who died in 1859. His first work was the "Reign of Ferdinand and Isabella," 1837; "The Conquest of Mexico," 1843; and the "Conquest of Peru," 1847. He was fortunate in being born in good circumstances, but was unfortunate in being nearly blind. So he had to depend on the assistance of another in his works. His style was of rather a florid kind but very readable. He was a grandson of Colonel William Prescott of Bunker Hill fame.

George Bancroft. This historian, born October 3, 1800, and who died on January 17, 1891, was a painstaking author, who issued his first volume of his great "History of the United States" in 1834, lived to publish his final volume, which brought his history to 1789, and is an authority on the subject as far as completeness and reliability is concerned. He studied at Gottingen, Germany, and imbibed the scientific treatment of history that the German historian Heeren had acquired. Bancroft was fortunate in having access to original sources in foreign countries, which he used unsparingly. His style is plain but devoid of literary color. He was rewarded by appointments as Secretary of the Navy, Minister to Great Britain and Minister to Germany.

John Lothrop Motley. Possibly at the head of American historians was John Lothrop Motley, who was born in 1814 and died in 1877. He, too, was a student at Gottingen and was made Minister to England. He chose

for his subject a country whose history ran along similar lines to those of his own country. His "Rise of the Dutch Republic," 1856, and "History of the United Netherlands," published 1861 to 1868, equaled Bancroft's in thoroughness and Prescott's in eloquence. It was superior to both in his masterly treatment of his characters. His sketches of Queen Elizabeth, Philip the Second, Henry of Navarre and William the Silent are without a rival, or at least an equal. In 1874 he completed his studies upon this subject by publishing "The Life of John Barneveld." Mr. Morley was the leader of American historians.

Francis Parkman. A close second to him was Francis Parkman, who wrote delightfully of his country. He was interested in the American Indians and in 1847 he published his first work, "The Overland Trail," a series of sketches contributed to the Knickerbocker Magazine and relating to the prairies and Rocky Mountains. In 1851 he followed this with his series upon the Seven Years War and its associate members and endeared himself to every student of that period of history. Beginning with "The Conspiracy of Pontiac," he followed with "France and England in North America." Six works cover this field of research, entitled "The Pioneers of France in the New World," "The Jesuits in North America," "LaSalle and the Discovery of the Great West," "The Old Regime in Canada," "Count Frontenac and New France," and "Montcalm and Wolfe." These narratives told in a refreshing manner, a style that showed him to be a master of his subject. His works have the interest of a romancer's narrative, which can be read with the interest of Cooper. He was born in 1823 and died November 8, 1893.

Charles Sumner was the successor of Daniel Webster in the United States Senate. We doubt if a better choice could have been made to succeed such a man as Web-

ster. Sumner was a student of art and literature. He was fond of books and had gathered a wonderful collection of paintings and engravings. But he abandoned all of this for a public life. Elected to the Senate in 1851, he immediately aligned himself with the Abolitionists, and from that day till his death in 1874 he was ever the friend of the colored man. So earnest and firm was he in his conviction that he earned the intense hatred of some of his Southern rivals, so that one of them, the South Carolina Senator, "Bully" Brooks, in 1856, attacked him and brutally beat him. He was not an easy speaker, but he thoroughly understood his subject and dealt his arguments with an impressive and earnest effectiveness. His most famous speeches were the one on "The Kansas and Nebraska Bill," delivered February 3, 1854, and "On the Crime Against Kansas," May 19, 1856. He rose to his highest pinnacle in his platform lecture on "The True Grandeur of Nations."



JARED SPARKS

Jared Sparks was another who deserves mention here. He was a good writer under his name and wrote considerable that was of lasting benefit. He is the author of "A Life of Washington," 12 volumes; "A Life of Franklin," 10 volumes; "Library of American Biography," 25 volumes, and many other volumes.

Massachusetts Artists. With an ancestry of the type of the Pilgrims one would not look for an artistic race. Neither was a Puritan society favorable to the growth of art. So, for a hundred years, we find very little evidence of art among the people of Massachusetts. The first artist—portrait painter, as we should say—was John Smy-

bert, who began to paint portraits as early as 1730. His work was of a severe type, even as he painted severe subjects. He died in 1751 and the next was Jonathan Blackburn. He left more than fifty portraits of prominent men and women of his day. A third to gain a wider celebrity than either of these was John Singleton Copley, born in Boston July 3, 1737. Copley was deserving of all that came to him. He was courtly and plausible in his deportment, and moved in the best society. He painted Washington's portrait when he came to Boston in 1775. Almost every noted person was painted by him. Copley left over two hundred paintings of men and women, all belonging to the better class of citizens.

Gilbert Stuart, born in Rhode Island, stepped into Copley's steps, painting the best class of people. His portraits of Washington are valuable today.

Art Galleries. The first attempt to found an art gallery in Boston originated with the Boston Athenaeum in 1876 for the benefit of artists to display their work annually. This was kept up until the Athenaeum needed the space for its library.

From this humble beginning Boston's art collection has become worth over \$30,000,000. Vast purchases at enormous expenses have been made in the art centres of the Old World. Since the day of Copley and Stuart Massachusetts has produced artists which have become nationally known. Of this taste she is genuinely proud.

Art Colony. One of the largest art colonies in the country gathers each year at Provincetown. Including painters, sculptors, etchers, art students and a choice gathering of professional models, more than six hundred gather here year by year. Here students and professionals work in classes or separate, each toiling, each striving to gain his success. All of this comes with the changes of the rolling years.

Yet after all that has been said, Massachusetts was really the reading centre in the days we have discouraged

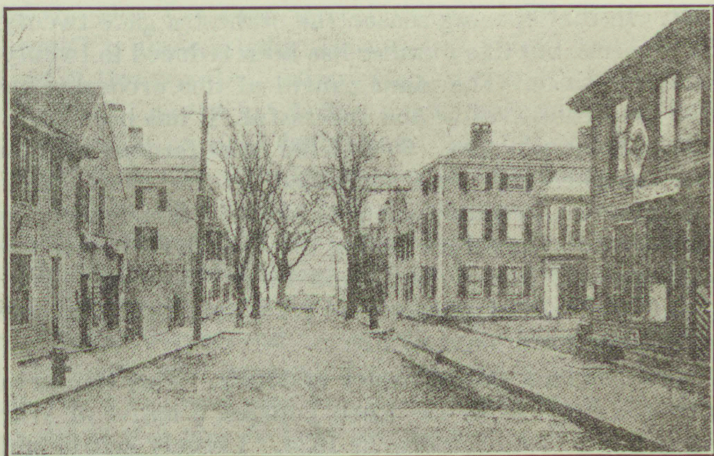
as cold and severe. The number of books printed in this country before 1700 numbered a few over two hundred. Of these more than half were religious books. One-half of the second half were histories and biographies. Of all of these only three or four were printed outside of New England. Of the nine books styled as literature only one, a translation, was published outside of New England. This shows very truthfully that this section of the country was doing most of the thinking.

Of all of these works the best known was Cotton Mather's "Magnalia."

Music. Composing and teaching of music begins in Massachusetts. The first native composer was William Billings, born in Boston, October 1, 1746. The son of a tanner, he early became interested in music and before 1770 he had prepared his New England Psalm-Singer, which soon became very popular. He founded in 1774 the Stoughton Musical Society, which became popular and strong. Other hymn composers were Oliver Holden, author of "Coronation"; Jacob Kimball, Andrew Law, Samuel Holyoke and Timothy Swan, author of "China," "Pownal," etc.

Handel and Haydn. The second oldest choral society is the Handel and Haydn, which was started by the choir of the Park Street Church in 1810. This society did not become noted until on Washington's Birthday, February 22, 1815, when it celebrated the conclusion of the War of 1812 and the signing of the Peace of Ghent on Christmas Eve, 1814. Its first President was Thomas S. Webb, followed by other well-known Presidents, among whom we may mention Lowell Mason and Jonas Chickering. Two great piano firms are descended from them. The leaders of this society have been very influential in the success of music. Among these we may mention Carl Zerrahn, Benjamin Lang and Emil Mollenhauer.

Pianos. Pianos were first known as “spinets,” and as such were known to the earliest players. The credit of this invention cannot be claimed by Massachusetts, but Boston was among the first to develop this instrument. The great American pioneer of piano building was Jonas Chickering. He was born in Ipswich, New Hampshire, on April 10, 1789, but he went into Massachusetts, where he died in 1853.



OLDEST STREET IN NEW ENGLAND

First Orchestra. The first orchestra in this country was the “Philharmonic Society,” which was founded in 1810, under the leadership Gottlieb Graupner, a German, who came to Boston in 1798. These concerts came to an end in 1824.

Boston Academy of Music. This society was founded in 1833 by William C. Woodbridge and Lowell Mason. From this academy came the beginning of musical education in the schools of this country. It took five years of opposition before it finally triumphed. It was not un-

til 1838 that music was established in the schools. The Boston Academy continued its valuable work at an annual loss until 1847, when it gave up.

Boston Symphony. The Boston Symphony was developed by Major Henry L. Higginson, a veteran of the Civil War and a banker. Seeing the need of a permanent orchestra and a lover of music, he organized this institution with great ability. The first concert was given in the old Music Hall on Saturday evening, October 23, 1881. In that opening season the orchestra gave twenty-six concerts, but this number has been reduced to twenty-four ever since. The management of this orchestra has ever been conservative and successful. It has been fortunate in its conductors. One of the most famous of these was Gericke. He was succeeded by Dr. Karl Muck, whose musical regime was concluded in this country by his German sympathies during the World War. He was followed by Henri Rabaud and Pierre Monteux. With giving a hundred concerts a year, this orchestra has established itself successfully.

New England Conservatory of Music. This Conservatory was founded by Dr. Eben Tourjee, a native of Warwick, Rhode Island, born in 1834. Largely self-taught, he had studied in Europe, and realizing that the Boston Academy of Music was too idealistic for its day, he opened the doors of his Conservatory in 1870.

Massachusetts Composers. The list of musical composers from Massachusetts is a long one and filled with notable names. One of the leading names is George Whitefield Chadwick, born in Lowell, in 1854. His father opposed his efforts in the direction of fitting himself for his life-work, but he overcame this as well as other obstacles. He studied in Boston under Dudley Buck and George Whiting in 1872. He then taught a year in Olivet, Michigan, where he saved enough money to go to Leipzig in 1877 to study with Reineike. He next produced

"Rip Van Winkle," a symphony, two string quartet and an overture. He followed this with a long list of composition, illustrating music in almost every form. He has native qualities of originality, humor, imagination and dramatic force. His songs have had a wide popularity. In 1880 he became a teacher in the Boston Conservatory of Music, where he has developed the orchestra and personal training of the pupils.

Among Chadwick's pupils may be mentioned Horatio Parker, who was born in Auburndale. His "Hora Novissima" is undoubtedly the greatest choral work produced in this country. Henry Hadley is another brilliant follower of Chadwick. Arthur Foote, born in Salem, has a nation-wide musical distinction. The "Mystic Trumpeter" of F. S. Converse has won him wide renown. Acknowledging the influence of no school, Henry F. Gilbert, of Somerville, is a man of no mean talent. Albert McDowell, though born in New York City, was Boston trained and taught. Losing his life in a tragedy, he left a reputation second to no one. These are but a few of the many who have pointed the way in musical success. New England may have lost its prestige in leading, but she is still able to hold her place as a leader in the field. The list has not been completed by any means.

First Newspaper in America. The "Boston News Letter," whose publication was begun in April 24, 1704, by John Campbell, was the first newspaper in North America. It was published regularly for seventy-two years, and discontinued in 1776.

The second newspaper in America was the "Boston Gazette," the first number coming out December 21, 1719. The third paper appeared in Philadelphia the following day. This was called the "American Weekly Mercury." These papers were all small and contained very little news as compared with the mammoth papers of today.

The Free Public Library. On July 26, 1852, the Council of the City of New Bedford passed a vote to raise \$15,000 for the purpose of establishing a free public library in the town. On August 16, of the same year, an ordinance was passed which established the first Free Public Library in the State. This library was opened on March 3, 1853.

The first person to move towards establishing a town library was the work of Rev. Francis Wayland, D. D., of Providence, Rhode Island. He caused the Library Act, as it was called, to be passed by the State Legislature in May, 1850. He had already given five hundred dollars to the town providing an equal amount should be raised by the community for the purpose of starting a library. The Wayland fund had been raised in 1848, and a room suitable to keep books in was soon opened on June 1, 1850. But it was not believed a town had the power to raise the money by taxation to support a library. So this was a sort of circulating library, where every one who took out a book paid a small sum daily while he kept the book.

The good work had been begun and the idea met with public approval, so within a few years libraries were quite common.

The Old Bay State has a record in its free public libraries second to no state in the Union. The Boston Public Library, planned in 1841 and incorporated in 1852, is the largest collection for free distribution in the world. It comprises the special collections of George Ticknor, Theodore Parker, Nathaniel Bowditch, Edward Everett and others. It contains in round numbers one million volumes, selected with care. It puts into circulation each year over one million copies, and its reading rooms circulate nearly as many of the magazines and periodicals.

CHAPTER XV

GOLDEN MASSACHUSETTS

Golden Massachusetts. A few years since people talked of the Golden West. There wonderful crops are raised almost without an effort. In Massachusetts the crop was grown and harvested only after patient and infinite care. The soil was frozen half of the year, and the short summers were growing shorter. Massachusetts could raise granite which was typical of her soil. She could raise ice, which was typical of her climate.

In regard to barrenness, a word peculiarly applied to New England soil, let us compare the results and see what we get. New Hampshire ranks easily as the first state in the United States in the ratio of corn; Connecticut comes second, and Massachusetts as third, with 39.4 bushels to the acre. The first named scored at 42.1 bushels. In Kansas the yield is only 27.8 bushels. Again, the first prize for flint corn went to Massachusetts at the National Corn Show in Omaha, only a few years ago.

Massachusetts leads all others in the value of her manufactured products. She is the great manufacturing and commercial state of the Union. Is not that something? Let us make some comparisons. The National agricultural investigations will show you that if Iowa has eleven times the area under cultivation, she produces only nine times as much. The tilled lands of Kansas are thirteen times as much as Massachusetts, and yet her crops bring her only a fraction over four times as much. California, with nine times as much territory and her intensive fruit raising, produces in value only three times as much as Massachusetts. And yet you tell us of a bar-

ren soil; of unendurable winters and short summers. You would never mistrust this, would you?

Nor has the limit been reached. Far from it. The wealth of the state increases every year. Cities are growing in size. Industries have increased and her prospect looks bright.

Soil and Forest Life. The soil of the state is varied, running from a sandy surface to a highly fertile loam. Bordering on the seacoast of the north-eastern section of the state are rich salt marshes, which yield hay to the farmers. On the south-eastern portion the land is sandy and not very productive, yet there are sections which produce good crops of hay and grain. Going towards the west there are fertile farms, which produce good crops of cereals, vegetables and fruit. In this region are to be found some of the best farms in the state. The land is inclined to clay and affords excellent yield. In the Connecticut valley and west of that valley the soil is noted for its fertility. Here hops, tobacco and onions grow in abundance. Originally this territory yielded a heavy crop of timber.

The leading productions are hay, oats, rye, buckwheat, beans, Indian corn, broom corn, hops, tobacco, garden vegetables, apples, pears, cherries, peaches, quinces and small fruit. In sections attention is given to the raising of grape and cranberry. Large quantities of butter and cheese are made, and in the vicinity of the cities milk for the market is raised. The farms in the more thinly settled portion consist of from forty to two hundred acres, and are commonly owned by the occupants. These farms are divided into appropriate sections of mowage, pasture land, woodland and meadow, fenced in by stone wall or wire fence with wooden posts. Improvements have been made in the style of caring for these farms and more pains is taken in the manner of marketing the produce. Massachusetts raises some of the finest apples in the world.

The Forest Population. Of timber trees the State has about sixty kinds of trees natural to this region. Among these may be mentioned the oak, of which as many as ten different kinds are found; the rock, white and red, or flowering maple; the beech, the gray, white, black and yellow birch, the elm, the poplar and basswood, the willow, the sycamore, the white pitch and red pine, the hemlock, spruce, larch, fir, arborvitae, cedar and hornbeam. Originally the country was heavily forested with these woods, but now none of the first growth is left, and we have only the second growth remaining with us, with very small prospect of ever replacing the first specimens. Forest culture is slowly becoming more popular each year. Let us hope this feeling will grow, year by year, in order that we may better shape the fall of rain and retention of water in the land.

The most valuable of the common shrubs which decorate our fields and pasture-land are the blueberry and whortleberry, the raspberry, black and red, the barberry, bayberry and cranberry, the sumac, used for tanning; the high and low blackberry, the elderberry, the beach plum and the buckthorn. Among the more decorative plants are the azalea, the laurel, the black alder, the Mayflower, the wild rose, the mountain raspberry, and other flowering shrubs which grow in more or less profusion in corners where they seem best fitted to grace the landscape.

Wild Flowers. The wild flowers beginning in the spring which enliven nature with their modest beauty are the ground laurel, often appearing before the snow has cleared away; the windflower or anemone, the arbutus, the dandelion, the white, blue and yellow violet, the strawberry, the white weed or gowan, the adder's tongue and spring beauty. With the advancing season comes the wild geranium, the iris, cardinal-flower, St. John's wort, the beautiful pond lily, the campanula, the lupine,

the yarrow, the orchis, and the ascepias. The autumn brings various species of the aster, the golden rod, the *Linnea borealis* and blue gentian. All through the seasons the ferns, mosses, lichens and trailing vines are always beautiful and abundant. A "peculiar glory of New England is the frost-tipped bloom of autumn," when the forest is rendered transcendantly glorious by the frosts.

Wild Animals and Fishes. In the days of the early settlers they were worried by the bears, black and brown, and the wolf, all of which ranged the forest by day and night, carrying terror wherever there were cattle in the clearings. The catamount and the wildcat were also to be feared. The moose, red deer and beaver were quite often met. These animals have all disappeared, save an occasional deer.

The red fox still roves through the thinly settled districts, while the raccoon, the otter and the porcupine are frequently seen. The mink and the muskrat are not infrequently seen on the margins of the streams; the striped, red and gray squirrels are quite common in the forests, and the rabbit. In the more thinly settled portions a woodchuck has not forgotten his tricks of mutilating garden vegetables.

Of the birds of prey the fish hawk, the red-tailed hawk, the red owl are the most common today. The bald eagle is now hardly seen at all, though it was once quite numerous. Of the birds the chickadee, the blue jay and the black crow are still with us. The meadow lark, the oriole, the crow blackbird, and until recently the bob-o-link refreshed us with their merry songs. The robin, pewit, bluebird, the brown thrush, the song sparrow, the chipping sparrow and the American goldfinch remain. Woodpeckers, swallows and humming birds are frequently seen. Night-hawks and whip-poor-will are often heard in the country.

The wild turkey and the heath hen have quite disappeared. The quail is only seldom seen, but the partridge is frequently found by the hunters still living in our forests.

Along the beaches plovers, curlews, herons, sandpipes, ducks and other water birds are found.

The inland sheets of water afford a good variety of fish, such as trout, pickerel, common perch, pond perch, pouts and other fresh water fish. Manufacture has driven the salmon and shad from some of the streams where they were common before dams were built across the rivers, making their passage difficult. In the spring great numbers of alewives, smelt and striped bass give good fishing to the people living on the seaboard.

The bulk of the fishing comes from off the coast, where cod, haddock, halibut and mackerel in countless numbers afford the State a great source of revenue.

Geographical Features... While the landscape of Massachusetts is broken and it has few level plains of extent, the state lacks the altitudes of the more northern New England States. It is crossed in the extreme western portion by the lower extremity of the Green Mountains by parallel ridges known as the Taconic and Hoosac Mountains. These ranges cross the state and serve to separate the waters of the Hoosatic from the Hudson and the waters of the Connecticut from joining the western streams. Greylock, the highest peak in the Taconic range, is but 3,505 feet in height. The rocks of this mountain are of "Shining Schistus," a light-blue in color. The land is covered with forests of beech, maple and birch, among which thrive a good growth of mosses, lichens and evergreen.

The Hoosac Range is not as high as the Taconic, its highest peak being Spruce Hill in North Adams, 2,588 feet high. The next height is the Clarksburg Mountain, which has an altitude of 2,272 feet. Two isolated peaks,

Mount Tom and Mount Holyoke, the first standing on the right bank of the Connecticut and the other on the left, seem to be the southern extremity of the Green Mountains and the White Mountains. Blue Hill in Milton, 635 feet high, is the highest altitude in the eastern section of the state.

The uplands of Massachusetts are mostly clothed in green verdure, and many of them are cultivated to the summit. The soil is usually fertile, and from their sides flow numerous streams of clear water to help keep the machinery of the mills in operation, as well as to irrigate the land.

Heart of the Berkshires. "On the right of Hoosac Valley rises Hoosac Mountains, through which the celebrated tunnel runs for almost five miles. From it a magnificent view of the valley of the Hoosac, the villages of Adams and majestic forms of the mountains opposite is obtained.

"On the left the valley of the Greylock, the central eminence of Saddle Mountain * * * at his feet lies the valley of the Hoosac, nearly three thousand feet below.

"Southwestward the eye sweeps over the top of the Taconics, away to the Catskills, beyond the Hudson; northwestward the peaks of the Adirondacks, in Northern New York, are plainly visible. In the north the sturdy ridges of the Green Mountains file away in grand outline. On the east Monadnock and Wachusett renew their stately greeting and Tom and Holyoke look up from their beautiful valley. Southward Mount Everett stands sentinel at the portal of Berkshire, through which the Housatonic flows.

"And all of this grand circuit is filled with mountains, range beyond range, peak above peak, they stretch away on every side, a boundless expanse of mountain summits.

"Standing here, and taking in with your eye all that is contained within the vague boundaries of the horizon,

you receive the grandest if not the very first impression you ever had of distance, of immensity and of boundless force."

Rivers and Water Powers. Massachusetts is "well watered." First of all is the Connecticut River, the longest river in New England. Finding its source in Northern New Hampshire, this stream generally in a southerly direction flows for four hundred miles before it enters Long Island Sound. The descent from its source to its mouth is 1,590 feet, more than two-thirds of this before it crosses the Massachusetts boundary line. In the Old Bay State it enters as picturesque scenery as it could find in New England. Upon leaving the New Hampshire and Vermont boundaries the river suddenly increases its width from five hundred feet to almost one thousand feet.

Sightseers cross the ocean to visit the mountain scenery of the Old World, to marvel at their wonders, forgetting that here in the country of the Lower Connecticut we have something just as good. Look upon the fertile intervalles and the hillsides dotted with pleasant homes, the mountain sides, with their rugged escarpments and the rolling, tumbling waters of the big river. Detached groups of the White Mountains and the Green Mountains hang on the outskirts of the water-way. The last on the left hand is Mount Holyoke and on the right Mount Tom, which stand like solid sentinels over the river and the landscape.

Until 1847 no one had seriously thought of putting the water-power to work. The drop at Turner's Falls is seventy feet, while at Holyoke it is barely ten feet less. An estimate was made then when it was decided that no less than three hundred and fifty mill-powers were running to waste. Cunning hands and heads went to work to save at least a part of this, and a dam was thrown across the river. This cost \$75,000. But it soon proved

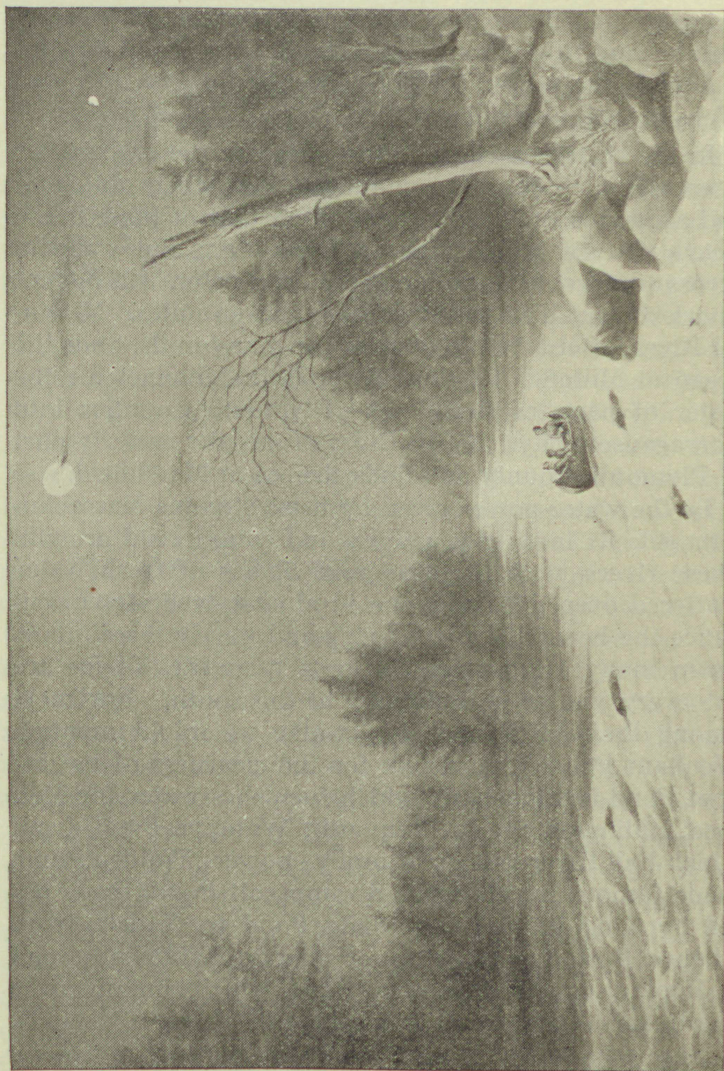
unequal to the strain brought to bear upon it, and so it was washed away. Then a second costing double the sum of the first was built, and since then, after twenty years, a third had to be constructed to save the water.

Holyoke, named for Mount Holyoke, which was so called for one of the first settlers in this vicinity, has undergone great changes; that is, a wilderness with a few dwellings has grown into a city of over six thousand population. It was given its city charter in 1873. Besides woolen mills, cotton mills, cutlery works, thread manufactures, iron works, and a host of other industries, there are twenty-five paper mills in Holyoke, and all do a thriving business.

Four cities stretch along the Connecticut River—Holyoke, Northampton, Chicopee and Springfield.

The second river of importance in New England flows through a corner of Massachusetts, and this has the cities of Lowell, Lawrence and Haverhill, all places of manufacturing, cotton and shoe mainly. This river enters the Atlantic at Newburyport. It is navigable for some vessels as far as Haverhill. Taken its length, this has been called the "busiest river in the world," on account of the number of spindles it turns and the forge fires it keeps burning.

The Merrimack has for its tributaries the Nashua River, which rises in the northeasterly section of Worcester County, flows through Fitchburg, Clinton, Shirley, Pepperell and other towns, affords some good water privileges, and enters the Merrimack at Nashua, N. H. The Concord River rises in Hopkinton and enters the Merrimack at Lowell. This, too, has good water power. The Blackstone River rises in Worcester County, and after furnishing the motive power for the manufactories at Millbury, Blackstone and other places, it meets the tide-water in Providence River. The French River, so named for the body of French Hugue-



MERRIMACK RIVER

nots who settled on its left bank in Oxford, rises in Leicester and flows in a southerly direction to join the Quinnebaug River from Connecticut. If a small stream, it affords the power for considerable manufacturing at Webster, and other places.

In the eastern section of the state are several smaller streams, which cross the country and find their outlets in and around Boston. The most important of these is the Charles River, which rises in Hopkinton, and wanders across the country to empty into Boston Harbor at Charlestown. This is navigable for seven miles. Neponset River, after affording power for many mills, finds the ocean at Milton. Taunton River is the channel for the water of parts of Bristol and Plymouth Counties into Narragansett Bay. North River drains the easterly part of Plymouth County and finds the sea at Marshfield.

To the water power given by these streams Massachusetts gets its industrial activity and commercial growth. These rivers, with the numerous bodies of fresh water scattered over the state, one in almost every town, enhance the beauty of the scenery and purify the climate. From many of these ponds large quantities of ice are cut every winter and shipped to the south. Foremost among these clear bodies of water we might mention Wenham Pond, remarkable for the clearness of its ice; Spot Pond in Stoneham, which furnishes water for Melrose; Billington Sea in Plymouth; Watuppa Pond, from which Fall River gets great motive power; Walden Pond, made famous by Thoreau; Swampscott Pond, made noted by King Philip; Cochituate Pond in Natick, from whence Boston gets its water supply; Whitehall Pond in Hopkinton; Quinsigamond Pond, which contains over one thousand acres and is dotted with charming islands, in Shrewsbury; Quaboag Pond in Brookfield, and many others. The total area of all the ponds in the state having over ten acres in any one is estimated to be over

ninety-two thousand acres. Their value to the state cannot be estimated. They should be kept clear and pure and classed among her most sacred possessions.

Climate. The climate of the state is changeable, as all New England weather is, but on the whole is favorable to mental strength, health and long life. Though subject to sudden changes in temperature, the summer months are remarkably clear and serene. The autumn is usually very clear and enjoyable. After the frosts of September comes as a rule two or three weeks of fair weather, which is known as "Indian Summer," a term left us by the aborigines, who believed this season was under the control of their great and good god to whom they were indebted for the blessings they enjoyed.

The winter season, which begins in December and lasts until March, is cold and severe, the ground freezing to several inches in depth and snow covers the earth most of the time. The temperature often falls below zero. The difference in temperature in different sections of the state is shown by the fact Martha's Vineyard is ten degrees warmer than it is at Williamstown at the same time. This is due to the fact that the Gulf Stream affects the atmosphere to that degree. One of the most unpleasant features of the climate is the sudden change that often takes place in the thermometer, which varies as much as forty degrees in less than twenty-four hours.

Historic Trees. Among the things of historic interest we know not of one that comes nearer a personal relation among the things that cannot speak for themselves than the tree. If the tree is large we admire it for its size. If it is very old we venerate it for its age. If it has historic interest we love it for its silent remembrance of the days gone by. In its list of wonderful trees the Old Bay State is particularly rich. It is difficult to select one above another and each leads us backward to the days of primeval forest.

The Lindens of Plymouth. The first trees that persist in fixing themselves on the mind are the old Lindens of Plymouth. This is true because they began their history here with the Pilgrims. These hardy people found here the pine, oak, chestnut and walnut, all of which they conquered with the land.

Not satisfied with the products of the soil, they brought here the linden and English oak, as shade trees for their yards. Among these deserving mention as a tree planter was Colonel George Watson, who in 1660 planted the linden trees of Plymouth. Some of the original trees remain as fair specimens of their kind. Also there is the old English oak near the Jackson place, formerly Governor Winslow's house, where the wife of Ralph Waldo Emerson was born. Besides these lindens are elms in the town square which were planted by Thomas Davis.

Washington Elm. Prominent among these forest people we may mention the Washington Elm, in Cambridge, where the Father of his Country accepted the command of the American Army at the beginning of the Revolution. A monument now marks the spot where this tree stood.

The Eliot Oak. Then there is the Eliot oak of South Natick, where the Apostle preached to the Indians. There is, too, the Endicott pear tree planted by him at Danvers in 1630, at the Orchard Farm. We have historic trees at Lexington and Concord, as well as in the Boxford elm, where the final deed of the sale of land was made by the Indians to the whites.

Grafton Oak. We wouldn't forget the Grafton oak, where the patriots rallied early in the Revolution. Nor would we ignore the Washington elm at Palmer, nor the Lafayette elm at Ware, where each of these leaders rested beneath their fragrant shade. Remember, too, the ancient oaks of Wayside Inn, the Sheffield elm and the host of others as worthy of mention.

Deerfield Trees. We cannot forget one of the foremost attractions of the old historic town of Deerfield is its trees. There is scarcely a spot in this town where some great deed was performed that is not marked by the close proximity of a tree. The old buttonwood, which is eighteen feet in circumference has a top which spreads one hundred feet. Within a circle of fifty yards took place many stirring scenes on colonial days. Almost within its shadows stood the old "Indian House," built by Ensign John Stebbins in 1698, and the Stebbins house where on February 29, 1703-04, seven men, with women and children held over two hundred Indians at bay for three hours.

On the Albany road is the elm tree where the Indians usually led their captives past to a ford in the river which led to the Mohawk Trail. This elm is in apparently good health and measures twenty feet in circumference, with a spread of top one hundred feet in breadth. This tree is eighty-two feet in height. There are sugar maples on the road to South Deerfield, and stately elms in front of the post office and library.

Civil Divisions. The State is divided into fourteen counties, as follows: Barnstable, Berkshire, Bristol, Dukes, Essex, Franklin, Hampden, Hampshire, Middlesex, Nantucket, Norfolk, Plymouth, Suffolk, and Worcester.

Of the larger places of government there are nineteen cities, of which Boston, with a population of 781,529, is the largest. The cities are governed by a mayor, board of aldermen and a common council, usually chosen annually.

The whole number of towns, exclusive of the nineteen cities, is 322. The towns choose annually by ballot their own officers, raise and appropriate money for schools, highways and public improvements as may arise from time to time. The most important offices are the boards of selectmen, treasurer and collector of taxes.

Water Works. Public means for supplying water to different localities are now very common in this country. But how many of you realize that a little over a hundred years ago there were only eight in the United States, and three of these were in Massachusetts? These exceptions were Salem, founded in 1796; Worcester, 1798; and Peabody in 1799. In 1845 Boston laid its plans to get its water from Lake Cochicote, Mystic Lake and Sudbury River. These works cost over \$20,000,000 and were not completed until 1850.

The city has so far outgrown this system that a bigger and mightier one is planned.

The Sacrifice of Towns. Little do we living outside of a great city dream of the importance of having a sufficient supply of water on hand ready to drink and use. It is now Boston's turn to look anxiously over the state to get its supply of this very necessary fluid. After years of talk and argument it has been decided to seek the supply needed in the valley of Swift River. To get this command of water supply several historic towns in the old Commonwealth will have to be blotted out in part if not wholly erased from the map. Two towns, at least, will have to be sacrificed completely. These unfortunate towns are Enfield and Greenwich.

When this work shall have been finished, and it will take six or eight years to complete it, the lake which will cover these valley towns will be many miles in area. It will command the drainage of a watershed one thousand miles in extent. The huge dam to be raised at the south end of Enfield, running from upland to upland, will submerge the homes of two thousand people. One thousand buildings will be destroyed, thirteen school-houses, fourteen railroad stations, six churches, fourteen mills, thirty-eight stores and other places of enterprise of more or less account will have to be destroyed. Besides these works of the living, twelve cemeteries will

have to be removed, for the dead must go as well as the living. Neither the dead nor the living will be able to hold their abode in this valley of water, this mighty pond under human construction to feed the inhabitants of the city living almost a hundred miles away. Of course, the good people of these doomed towns have fought this movement anxiously day by day, but in vain.



OLD TIME KITCHEN

Dwellings. A great change had come over the people in the style of their dwellings. At the breaking out of the Revolution a few log cabins were to be seen, and these were looked upon as curiosities rather than abodes of men. As soon as saw mills had come to be used primitive cabins gave place to more comfortable houses.

In this respect it must be borne in mind that wealth was more scattered in New England than in the South. Wealth seems to have fallen into possession of fewer men and these built themselves magnificent mansions, with a display of outbuildings. Many of these huge dwellings were constructed of stone and brick which

were common. But in New England wood generally prevailed.

Character of Population. Past century has witnessed wonderful changes in the character of the population of the United States. But nowhere has it been greater than in New England. For one hundred and fifty years after its first settlement at Plymouth, Massachusetts was the purest English people to be found, even in Old England. Her population was made up entirely of British immigrants, outside of a handful of French Huguenots in Massachusetts and a few Scotch-Irish in New Hampshire. When land began to be opened up in the West, beginning as near as New York state, emigrants from Massachusetts began to cross the country into the new fields. They pushed into the valley of the Mohawk, and through northern New York, and then continued westward into Ohio, and one state after another until they had reached the Pacific slope even to the Pacific Ocean. Every state of the northern tier across the Union thus has a strong element of the traditions, habits and modes of New England in all of their methods of living. So everywhere has been felt the influences of the Puritanic people, who first settled New England.

To offset this Massachusetts has had her own changed. Beginning about 1840, a very large incoming of the Irish immigrants, followed by French, Scandinavians and Germans, came into the country. These have been followed in more recent years by other races from Southern Europe, so today just what the mental influence of the future will be is difficult to forecast. Still, we cannot help believing that the same rockbound country will predominate and that Massachusetts will continue to have an equal prominence in shaping the affairs of the country that she has had in the past. We have no doubt of their ability to cope with the problems of the future as they have in bygone years.

The Pilgrim and Puritan Spirit. Our story of the Old Bay State is told. In telling it we have told the story of the whole country. It was here on the rock-bound, inhospitable shore of New England that the foundation of the history of America was written in granite letters. With their bare hands the Pilgrims felled the forests, defied the wilds and set to work to build up such a Republic as the world had never known. Without that stubborn force and stern resolve to conquer, let the opposition be what it might be, America could never have attained the great moral and physical height it has gained.

Pilgrim and Puritan spirit mingled in all that was accomplished and this spirit went abroad over the land,



EARLY FASHIONS

until today it is seen and felt in all that has been accomplished. Though vast throngs from the Old World have rushed in among the New England sons and daughters, all filled with ideas foreign to the conservative spirit of Massachusetts, all have met a stern rebuke from the pioneer force. Her foundation was laid too firmly in the

solid earth of civilization to be torn out by an alien civilization. Wherever the American flag has been borne it has been carried on the shoulder of a sturdy New England citizen. Every flutter of the starry emblem was the gesture of conquest, and the proud boasts of her conquests has been the voice of the Massachusetts free-man.

Wherever the American flag flies it has been borne on Puritan shoulders. Wherever America has stood at bay, her freedom imperilled from within and without, she has stood firmly on her own soil, and conquered. She has ever been victorious in the face of whatever odds.

Never at rest, the conquest of the West from her borders to the Pacific shores have been won by Massachusetts valor and ruggedness. Nor have her victories been confined in this country alone. The ships of Boston have conquered the ports of all nations, until today we are known in every part of the globe. Neither has the transportation of industries been all we have accomplished. We might have these things and still be lacking a soul. Our towns, our meeting houses, our schools, our factories, our grain-mills stood side by side. These became the passwords to more than princely powers. From the little red schoolhouse has come the intelligent power to shape the fortune of the world. In knowing this we have found what a fine thing it is to be a Son of the Old Bay State. Massachusetts is a small corner in the world, but the proud mother of that gallant procession of adventurers who have led in the roll of American achievement.

REVIEW EXERCISES

EXERCISES I

1. The Mother of New England?
2. A small ship upon a stormy sea?
3. The First Wash day?
4. The early comers of Cape Cod?
5. Five weeks off Cape Cod? What can you say of those days?
6. Tell what you can of others coming to America. What had others found here?
7. Resources of the Pilgrims? What sort of a man was the captain?
8. The start and loss of the Speedwell?
9. What can you say of the ages of the Pilgrims? How did they dedicate themselves to the cause of the pact? What was the Mayflower compact?
10. What can you tell us of Plymouth Rock? What have the men in common?
11. Plymouth? What of the first houses? Plymouth homes?
12. Dress of the Pilgrims?
13. Mournful winter? How did the Pilgrims work?
14. Samoset's welcome? Tell all you can of it.
15. The Death Toll?
16. Treaty of Massasoit? How long was it kept?
17. How did the Pilgrims keep in touch with the land about the Kennebeck?

EXERCISES II

1. Tell us all you can of an Indian tourist. The story of Squanto?
2. Tell all you can of the Pilgrims and the Indians?
3. The good the Indians did?
4. First Thanksgiving? Anecdotes of the Pilgrims?
5. Mary Chilton's romance?
6. Tell what you can of Miles Standish? His courtship?
7. The Lost Boy? Who was lost and how?
8. An Indian's treachery? Who was to blame? Friendly conduct of Standish?

9. Five kernels of corn? A day of fasting and prayer?
10. Indian's Boston?
11. Bradford's Pilgrims? How long did he live?
12. Bradford's successors?
13. Characteristics of the Pilgrims?
14. The Governors of Plymouth colony?

EXERCISES III

1. Return of the Mayflower? First town meeting? Describe this?
2. The Puritans? How many ships came?
3. The Yorkshire farmers?
4. Troubles begin for the Puritans? Roger Williams? His flight?
5. Settlement at Hartford, Connecticut? The Roxbury party? Hooker's emigration? This seems to have been an active year?
6. The old Connecticut road?
7. Rev. John Wheelwright?
7. Anne Hutchinson? What can you tell of her?
8. What can you tell of the Quakers? Upsal banished?
9. Harsh laws? Give some examples of the laws?
10. Witchcraft? Give an example of witchcraft?

EXERCISES IV

1. Puritan traits? What were the qualities of the Puritanic faith?
2. The Puritan Sabbath? What was the characteristics?
3. The meeting house? What was their characteristics?
4. The stove in church?
5. The call to church? Music in churches?
6. A Biblical state?
7. The oldest meeting houses?
8. Governor John Winthrop? "The father of his state?"
9. End of commonwealth? What enemies had sprung up?
10. A Royal governor? What was the end of the Puritanic republic?
11. Conduct of Andros? What can you say of him?
12. Land titles in danger? What became of Andros?
13. What followed Andros? What came after? What followed the republic?
14. Governors of Massachusetts?

EXERCISES V

1. Indian traditions? Who tells its story?
2. Indians of Massachusetts? What can you say of them?
3. The Old Bay Path? Describe this?
4. Describe these warriors?
5. Describe the men? The women? Their schools?
6. The weapons? The animals? Wild turkey? Song birds?
7. Agriculture? What were the things met with?
8. Wildwood life? Origin? Indian Corn? Pequot War?
When was war turned to massacre?
9. How did the Whites treat the Indians? Was war just?
10. First Indian church?
11. The Apostle Eliot? Like Passaconaway? Konkawasco,
what can you say of him?
12. State line?
13. King Philip's war?
14. Captain Church? How did King Philip die?
15. Cost of war? Indian sufferings? A tearful appeal for
help?
16. When neutral Indians suffered?
17. Indians seek help? Jack Straw? Eliot here?
18. First Mine?
19. Free from the Pequots? New arrivals? The first printer?

EXERCISES VI

1. Wheeler's expedition to Quabaug? Death of Captain Hutchinson?
2. Indian surprise at Malboro? What followed?
3. Captain Wadsworth? Scenes of horror?
4. Men of '75? What was the similarity?
5. The Waldron Massacre? What was the example?
6. Exploit of Hannah Dustin? Tell the story?
7. The Snow Shoe Scouts? Relate this incident?
8. Captain Tyng Petition? Captain William Tyng?
9. Joe English? What of him?
10. Old Harry? What did the men of the woods?
11. Indian attack at Deerfield? John Williams a captive?
12. Indian overthrow at Norridgewock? Lovewell's expedition? Give the battle?
13. A pioneer heroine? Give the experience?
14. Mrs. Norton's defence?
15. A heroine of Dorchester? Give the alarm?

EXERCISES VII

1. The Royal Governors? The period of this array of Governors?
2. The old South Church?
3. Faneuil Hall?
4. Reverend George Whitefield?
5. Louisburg? Give the story of the fortress?
6. Products of the soil?
7. Resources of the Puritans?
8. Disappointment of the Pilgrims?
9. Home manufactures? What inducements were offered?
10. Other manufactures? Give lists?
11. First sawmill?
12. Shipbuilding? Boston becomes a ship-building station?
13. Bootmakers get together?
14. Fish and lumber? How did this grow?
15. First Iron Foundry? Improved scythes?
16. Educational matters?
17. The Hero Dead of San Lazaro?
18. Infamous origin of an honored name?
19. Phipps' expedition to Canada? Other expedition?
20. Influence of Pioneers? Northampton influence? Years of happiness?

EXERCISES VIII

1. Independence? The town meeting? British blindness?
2. The oratory of Otis? The Stamp Act? Otis?
3. Samuel Adams? John Hancock?
4. Stamp Act repealed? Tax on tea?
5. British problems?
6. The Boston Massacre? Give the particulars?
7. Hutchinson's mistake?
8. Boyish patriotism?
9. Provisional Congress?
10. The Lexington alarm? Paul Revere? Betrayed?
11. The fight at North Bridge?
12. The Drummer Boy of Lexington? The Young Messenger of Lexington?
13. Where the Minute Men stood?
14. General Artemus Ward?
15. Bunker Hill? What was the situation? The redoubt?
16. Stark occupies the open space?
17. Reasonableness of Dearborn's reply.
18. Colonel William H. Prescott? Prescott's rebuke? Number of killed?

EXERCISES IX

1. Prospects of the Provincials? Arrival of Washington?
2. Tree under which General Washington took command?
After the battle?
3. Morgan's Riflemen?
4. Arnold's Expedition to Quebec? His men? Hunger? Golden Opportunity? A Victory Lost?
5. Washington held Boston?
6. Fought for Dorchester Heights? Riflemen rebel?
7. The British resort to cowardly trick?
8. A Council of War? Tories? Bunker Hill avenged?
9. Bases of war changed? Massachusetts soldiers away from home?
10. Sketch of John Adams?
11. John Thomas?
12. Benjamin Lincoln?
13. General Henry Knox?
14. Men of Marblehead?
15. Molly Pitcher?
16. Samuel Adams, the Father of the Revolution?
17. The American Joan of Arc?
18. The hard times that followed War?

EXERCISES X

1. The Romance of the Revolution? The Lexington of the sea? Corbett vindication?
2. Manly of Marblehead? Glover to the rescue?
3. Manly Prize?
4. Captain Mugford's Exploit? Fate of Captain Mugford?
5. Captain Harraden? One more for Harraden?
6. Five sailors? How they overcame the ship's crew?
7. Commodore Tucker? His heroism? Samuel Tucker's anecdote.
8. A perilous errand?
9. The Essex? The story of her slaughter?
10. Old Ironsides? The story of her handling? Under her different commanders?
11. A Tribute? A Quotation?

EXERCISES XI

1. Boston as a shipping port? Boston and London? How did a war between France and Great Britain affect trading vessel?

2. War of 1812? How many ships had Boston in 1828?
3. How did steamers affect Boston? Mr. Cunard's liners of steamships?
4. First steamships into Boston? How did the cold affect Boston?
5. Train's Liverpool packet? Donald McKay.
6. Boston and European Steamship Company? Other attempts were made?
7. Boston Record?
8. Transportation? The Erie Canal? First railroad in Massachusetts?
9. Boston to the Hudson? Other Charters?
10. Miles of railroad in 1840? State interest in the railroads?
11. Railroad Commission? Electric railroad?
12. Foreign trade?
13. The Stone Arch Bridge? How was the original builder treated?
14. Mowhawk Trail? What can you say of the country?
15. Hoosac Tunnel?
16. What can you tell of Rufus Putnam, the Founder of Ohio?
17. Ward, the god of battles? Tell about Gordon?

EXERCISES XII

1. Inland commerce? Home industry?
2. Manufactures? How can the trade be mentioned?
3. Importance of the Woolen Industry? Spinning Bees?
4. American Woolen Manufactures? Fathers of the Industries?
5. Carding Machines?
6. An Early Woolen Mill?
7. The story of Shoe-Making? Mention the different inventions?
8. Shoe Pegs by Machinery?
9. First Tannery? Other Tanneries?
10. Nails first made by machinery?
11. Manufacture of Glass? Berkshire Glass Company?
12. Paper manufacture? Morgan Envelope? Dennison Tag?
13. New England Cutlery?
14. Metal Drills?
15. First Ironworks in America?
16. Elevators?
17. Heating Systems?
18. Tack Manufactory?

19. Lamson Cash Railway?
20. The Romance of Machinery? The Farmer's Friends?
21. First Arc-Welded Bridge?
22. Benjamin Franklin? A sketch?

EXERCISES XIII

1. Shay's Rebellion?
2. War of 1812?
3. The Mexican War?
4. Slavery in Massachusetts? Equal Rights?
5. Story of Quaco?
6. Missouri Compromise?
7. Abolition?
8. William Lloyd Garrison? Philips and Sumter?
9. Dangerous theories?
10. Daniel Webster?
11. The Civil War?
12. Massachusetts in the Civil War?
13. Henry Wilson?
14. Rufus Choate?
15. Massachusetts in the European War? Give each battle separately?

EXERCISES XIV

1. Story of Education?
2. First returns? A revolution in school affairs?
3. First Normal in America?
4. Charter's Plans? Mann's efforts? Bitter opposition?
5. Schools of today?
6. School government? A backward glance?
7. Higher education?
8. Harvard College?
9. Mary Lyon?
10. Parochial schools?
11. Massachusetts a leader?
12. School books?
13. Amherst College? Boston University? Clark University? Williams College? Tufts College? Massachusetts Institute of Technology? Agricultural College? Wellesley College? Smith College? Andover Theological Institution? Newton Theological School? Parochial Schools? Moody School? Boston English High?

14. Preparatory schools? Allen's Classical School? Wesleyan Academy.
15. Men of Letters? Richard Henry Dana? William Cullen Bryant? Henry Wadsworth Longfellow? John Greenleaf Whittier? Oliver Wendell Holmes? James Russell Lowell? Emerson and the Concord Authors? A. Bronson Alcott? Louisa M. Alcott? Margaret Fuller? Nathaniel Hawthorne? Thoreau? William H. Prescott? George Bancroft? John Lothrop Motley? Francis Parkman? Charles Sumner?
16. Massachusetts Artists?
17. Art Gallery? Art Colony?
18. Music? Handel and Haydn? Pianos? Orchestras? Boston Academy of Music? Boston Symphony? New England Conservatory?
19. Massachusetts Composers?
20. First Newspapers?
21. First Free Public Library?

EXERCISES XV

1. Golden Massachusetts?
2. Soil and Forest Life?
3. Wild Animals?
4. Geographical Features?
5. Heart of the Berkshires?
6. Rivers and Water Powers.
7. Historic Trees? The Lindens of Plymouth? Washington Elm? The Eliot Oak? Grafton Oak? Deerfield Trees?
8. Civil Division?
9. Water Works? Sacrifice of Towns?
10. Dwellings?
11. Character of Population?
12. Pilgrim and Puritan Spirits?

